COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

MIDDLESEX SS.

SUPERIOR COURT CRIMINAL ACTIONS NOS. 85-63, 64, 66 67; 85-2678-2680

COMMONWEALTH

vs.

CHERYL AMIRAULT LEFAVE

BEFORE: Borenstein, J.

VOLUME II

Wednesday February 18, 1998 Cambridge, Massachusetts

APPEARANCES:

FORM LASER BOND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

j,

LYNN ROONEY and CATHERINE SULLIVAN, Assistant District Attorneys, for the Commonwealth

DANIEL WILLIAMS, JAMES SULTAN, DANIEL FINNERAN and CATHERINE HINTON, Esqs., for the Defendant

> Patricia Bellusci Official Court Reporter

INDEX

<u>WITNESS</u>	DIRECT	CROSS	REDIRECT	RECROSS
Dr. Maggie Bruck By Mr. Williams By Ms. Rooney	2-3	2-84	2-213	
Dr. Diane H. Schetky By Mr. Sultan By Ms. Rooney	2-252	2-282		

<u>EXHIBITS</u>

NUMBER

(None)

PAGE

(

;

2 - 3 1 Wednesday 2 February 18, 1998 3 Cambridge, Massachusetts 4 (9:09 a.m.) 5 THE COURT: Good morning, counsel. 6 MR. WILLIAMS: Good morning, your 7 Honor. 8 MS. ROONEY: Good morning, your 9 Honor. 10 THE COURT: We did it during Mr. Williams direct yesterday. I'm going to wait 11 12 to turn up the thermostat today when you 13 begin your cross, Ms. Rooney. 14 MS. ROONEY: Thank you. MR. WILLIAMS: Your Honor, I think we 15 left off in the midst of the J 16 17 videotape. I want to resume there. 18 THE COURT: Yes. 19 20 DR. MAGGIE BRUCK, RESUMED 21 DIRECT EXAMINATION, RESUMED 22 BY MR. WILLIAMS: 23 Good morning, Dr. Bruck. Q. 24 Α. Good morning.

10/97D

PENGAD • 1-8---631-6989

FORM LASER JUND A

Ć

2 - 4 Let's talk about what we saw yesterday just 1 Q. to orient ourselves. We began the tape at the 2 nine-minute twenty-second mark, at B-238, 3 4 when you see a series of questions beginning with, "Did you ever see a clown" --5 6 THE COURT: I'm going to need to get 7 those two again. 8 [Documents handed to Court.) 9 [By Mr. Williams:] I want to focus, for a minute, on B-238, the 10 Q. fourth line down, where Susan Kelley asked, 11 12 "Did you ever see a clown before," and that series of questions going down to about the 13 middle of the page. Do you see where she asks 14 15 a series of about four or five questions all dealing with the clown? 16 17 Α. Yes. That sort of repetitive questioning about one 18 Q. 19 particular topic, or person, or subject, what 20 do you have to say about that? Well, repeating questions is not a great idea 21 Α. under any circumstances, but there is 22 scientific evidence that when you do this 23 with young children, it certainly is a signal 24

10/97D

FORM LASER BOND A DENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

3

to them -- or let me -- when you do this with young children, it's very often that they'll change their answer with the repeated questioning. The signal is: You didn't give me the right answer. Or the child reasons: I didn't give the right answer; let me try another answer.

So one tries very hard not to ask repeated questions especially, I mean, if one doesn't get the answer one wants. Sometimes we might use it as another kind of technique just to see how consistent the child is being.

Q. You said it's not a great idea. Now, I want to make sure whether that's just a particular locution that you use in conversation or is it not a great idea but it's okay --

18 A. No, I think --

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

19

FORM LASER BOND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

Q. -- or does it have baleful effects?

A. It has baleful effects, and in some recent
interviewing guidelines, it's my impression
that this is one of the guidelines: don't ask
repeated questions. Don't ask the same
question over and over again.

2 - 5

1	Q.	2-6
2	<u> </u>	And in your research, the research that we
		discussed yesterday, where we've got the high
3		rates of false assents, for example, in the
4		Monkey-Thief Study, where it even reached a
5		hundred percent.
6	A.	Right.
7	Q.	Did you deploy that technique of repetitive
8		questioning.
9	A.	Within interviews we did.
10	Q.	Within interviews?
11	A.	Yes. And between interviews.
12	Q.	Okay. Here we're talking about within an
13		interview?
14	A.	Yes.
15	Q.	Okay. Now, let's go down to the line the
16		next line, "Did you ever see an elephant?"
17		Do you see that?
18	A.	Yes.
19	Q.	Is that a from what you understand of the
20		record in this case, is that just an
21		innocuous question asked of this child, or
22		was there a theory behind it?
23	A.	My understanding is that my reading of the
24		record that another child had previously

ر المراجع م مراجع المراجع الم

9

1 talked about an elephant, and they were asking children about elephants. I think we 2 saw another child who was asked about an 3 elephant also. I think June B 4 was 5 asked about elephants also. : 6 Okay. So that also is a leading question Q. trying to inject a particular topic for this 7 8 child? Well, it's a specific question about 9 Α. something the child's not brought up before, 10 11 yes. 12 Okay. Q. 13 THE COURT: Did you see anywhere in the record where any child said anything 14 about an elephant on their own? 15 16 THE WITNESS: I have to go back and review it. I think it first came up with 17 Jaimie Ryan, and I think that initially it 18 came up as an innocuous statement; and then 19 it was -- it's -- I had -- this is in our 20 brief. We have the whole description of the 21 elephant in our brief in a case history. 22 The name of the child is J 23 And there we described how that allegation comes out 24

2 - 7

CORM LASER BOND A (C) PENGAD · 1-800-631-6989

.Q/6/0

2 - 8 1 and how it's spun out through what part of the trial. I didn't review it for here 2 because it was just the four children. 3 4 THE COURT: Okay. 5 [By Mr. Williams:] Now, in the next question -- we're still on 6 Ο. 7 the same page. So we've got repeated questions about the clown. Then a question 8 directing the child's attention to an 9 elephant. Now, the next question, "Did you 10 11 ever see a puppet?" And she says she's finished with the doll. So we move from dolls 12 13 to puppets? 14 Α. Mm-hmm. 15 And then just read, to refresh your Q. recollection, what Susan Kelley says there, 16 17 and I'd like you to tell me the significance 18 of that? 19 (Witness examines document.) Α. 20 Well, she's taking the clothes off the doll 21 and --22 THE COURT: She is whom? 23 THE WITNESS: Susan Kelley is taking the clothes off the dolls. 24

رینہ 10

FOHM LASE! UND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1... -631-6989

		2 - 9
1	A.	
2		take them off, okay." So she says, "We
3		didn't see her without her clothes on." I
4		don't know who "her" is, but I think that
5		she's inducing the child through some kind of
6		scenario where there's a kid without clothes
7		on, so let's take the clothes off the doll.
8		"Hope she doesn't get cold." And then, "She's
9		got blue eyes like you."
10		This could be an attempt to have the
11		child identify with the doll. And then but
12		then she says, but "the little girl's sad."
13		And so, again, this is not an attempt to
14		project this whole situation of the doll
15		being sad, being naked, onto J erry to see if
16		any allegation will come out. And then J
17		doesn't know why the doll is sad, doesn't
18		really get this one. And then gives a very
19		good answer about why she's sad. "She doesn't
20	-	have her clothes on."
21	Q.	Okay. So, just for the record, and the tape
22		obviously will speak for itself, the first
23		question regarding the clown began at the
24	<u> </u>	nine-minute-twenty mark. At this point we're



Ì

ĸ

10/97D

2-10 at the ten-minute ten-second mark, so all 1 2 this is happening within less than a minute. 3 I want to turn your attention to the next page, at the ten-minute thirty-second-4 5 mark, at the top of the page, where now the child's directed to the vagina? 6 7 Α. Right. 8 Q. Do you see that? 9 Α. Mm-hmm. "Do you think someone touched her vagina?" 10 Q. 11 Α. Right. The reference is to the, to what, the doll? 12 Q. 13 Α. I guess. If you look back at the previous page, it 14 Q. 15 appears that's what --16 It is the doll. Α. 17 Now, you talked yesterday about symbolic Q. 18 representation --19 Α. Yes. 20 -- do you recall that? Q. Is that what's happening here? 21 22 Uh, at this point, I don't think so. Kelley Α. has not said yet, "Let's pretend this doll is 23 you." She gets as far as saying, "Let's 24

10/97D

FORM LASER BOND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

2-11 pretend this girl doll is at Fells Acres." 1 So at this point she's trying to see if 2 Jackie will talk about any sexual activity at 3 Fells Acres at all using the doll, but it's 4 5 not yet directed towards her. 6 Q. Okay. But still, she's still being asked to pretend 7 Α. that this doll is at Fells Acres, and it's 8 this -- at this point it's not the symbolic 9 representation. It's the pretend part that's 10 11 really very worrisome. 12 And it's worrisome in terms of --Q. Because the child's being asked to pretend 13 Α. and not to tell what happened. 14 And to root it in the research, one of the 15 Q. research studies, is it not, the Mousetrap 16 17 Study, that --Well, there are several studies that when you 18 Α. ask children to pretend that at some point, 19 or just to imagine what would happen, or to 20 think about things that might have happened, 21 that over time they will come to claim that 22 these things did happen. 23 By the way, in your research dealing with 24 Q.

10/97D

FORM LASER BOND A B PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

7

.

-

		2-12
1		children, normal-healthy children, did you
2		find an inclination towards wanting to
3		pretend or being amendable to pretending?
4	A.	Well, children pretend. And it's one of the
5		reasons we use this in the Monkey-Thief Study
6		was when we couldn't get the child to go
7		along with our suggestions, you know when you
8		say, "Okay. Well, if you're not going to tell
9		us, then let's just pretend what will
10		happen," you always get answers from them at
11		that point. They'll pretend.
12	Q.	And that Monkey-Thief story where you
13		resorted to the "let's pretend"
14	A.	Mm-hmm.
15	Q.	when you failed to get them to talk about
16		talk about it directly
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	that's the study you got a hundred
19		percent
20	A.	Yes.
21	Q.	false assent
22	A.	Yes.
23	Q.	assent rates?
24	A.	Right. But we didn't count the pretend. When

Ì

FORM LASEH JOND A 🏟 PENGAD • 1-50-631-6989

 \bigcirc

		2-13
1		they pretended, we didn't count that as a
2		false assent.
3	Q.	Oh, you didn't?
4	A.	No.
5	Q.	So if you had counted that
6	A.	Well, then it would have been a hundred
7		percent from the very beginning because
8		everyone pretended. We only use we use the
9		pretend as a way to prime an assent for the
10		very next session, which would have been five
11		days down the line.
12	Q.	So the pretending actually, it makes it even
13		more egregious under the Monkey-Thief
14		experiment, I mean if you try to graph that?
15	A.	Well, it tells you that the rates that we
16		get, when we get a hundred percent, these
17		don't happen when children are pretending.
18		It's when they said, "Yes, it happened to me
19		and I was there."
20	Q.	Okay. And that's when you testified
21		yesterday about the the blurring of the
22		line between fact and fantasy, is that what
23		you were referring to?
24	A.	Well, the hypothesis is that when you ask

FUHM LASEF JND A (2) PENGAD+ 1-E 831-6989

×...

		2 - 1 4
1		children to pretend, that you do blur that
2		line so that they eventually come to say,
3		"Yes, it happened to me."
4	Q.	Now, since we're on the topic about the
5		pretending, that's not what you did with the
6	. 4-	Pediatrician Study though?
7	A.	No.
8	Q.	And we saw there, even without resorting to
9		the pretending scenario or guided imagery, we
10		still had children touching their touching
11		a vagina or playing with the doll?
12	A.	That's correct.
13	Q.	Okay. Now, the next line, "What would happen
14		if someone touched her vagina, would she be
15		sad?" The phrasing of the question calls for
16		speculation?
17	A.	That's right.
18	Q.	Tell me about that again?
19	A.	Well, this is another way to pretend, calling
20		for speculation. This is something that
21		Garven and Wood introduced into their study
22		as one of their components of suggestive
23		interviews that they found had a cumulative
24		effect on the children's false assent rates

FUHM LASEL OND A 😰 PENGAD • 1- 631-6989

Array .

L.

_		2 - 1 5
1		to this man coming into the classroom.
2	Q.	Okay. The Garven and Wood Study was the very
3		first one you mentioned. What was the name of
4		that study?
5	A.	This was the one of the McMartin case I
6		think it was McMartin.
7	Q.	Oh, the McMartin case. Right.
8		And then we see towards the middle of the
9		page an explicit invocation to "let's
10		pretend"
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	do you see that? Okay.
13		Then towards the three-quarters of the way
14		down, "Remember you said you were a girl and
15		you had a vagina." Now, they're directing
16		Susan Kelley is trying to direct it towards
17		her body?
18	A.	That's right.
19	Q.	"Did anybody touch your vagina," do you see
20		that?
21	A.	Yes.
22	Q.	And then what follows is a series of
23		questions to orient her towards that. They
24		talk about going to a doctor, taking a bath,

.

FORM LASER VD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

E .

2 - 161 etcetera, and then using the doll? 2 Α. Right. 3 Okay. I think that takes us up to where 0. 4 we're at. It's the bottom of that page, 240. 5 [Videotape played.] 6 7 THE WITNESS: You have to put it 8 louder. 9 THE COURT: Yeah. Can you just stop 10 there for a moment. 11 [Videotape stopped.] THE COURT: And have you go back just 12 a few seconds because in the transcript the 13 14 question -- part of the question from Miss 15 Kelley is, "J 📕, did any person, any, like, big person, ever touch you there?" And 16 I thought what is not included in the 17 transcript is the child shaking her head no, 18 19 but I want to make sure. 20 MR. WILLIAMS: Okay. 21 [Videotape played.] 22 [Videotape stopped.] 23 [By Mr. Williams:] I want you to go to 241, what we just saw. 24 Ο.

וטיאים

40 A 🚯 PENGAD•1-8(31-6989

FORM LASER

1 A. Okay.

Q. Beginning where she begins to focus on Tooky, the fourth line down, "June 100, did Tooky ever look at you without your clothes on?" Do you see that?

6 A. Mm-hmm.

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

531-6989

PENGAD . 1-8

Э

A DNr

FORM LASER

Q. And then there's a series of questions relating to Tooky, and then the direction is towards Cheryl.

When you reviewed these interviews with Susan Kelley, did you find this kind of focus on a person, a series of questions about a person as emphatic as we see here when the child names another person aside from Tooky, Cheryl or Violet?

My impression is that the questioning was 16 Q. generally on the defendants; that if another 17 person was named, there may be one question 18 about it, and then that was dropped, and then 19 the questioning focused on the defendants. 20 Okay. Then at the bottom of the page, the use 21 Q. 22 of the puppets, and then the invocation of helping, you know, that the dolls should help 23 us because we want Junior to help us, do 24

1		2-18 you see that?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	What can you tell us about that as a device
4		given your research?
- 5	A.	
	A.	Well, the puppets we've used puppets
6		are sometimes used to help children to talk
7		actually.
8	Q.	Right.
9	A.	And it's a way to induce fantasy, but it's
10		it's not a very useful actually, it's not
11		a very useful technique. I certainly wouldn't
12		I wouldn't suggest that people use it. I
13		mean, what we know from our research is that
14		it distracts children. They get very confused
15		about who they're supposed to be talking to;
16		what they're supposed to be saying. And, I
17		mean, I just wouldn't endorse it as a
18		technique for eliciting true allegations or
19		false allegations. But here, she's trying to
20		use these play figures to get J
21		talk about what happened at Fells Acres, and
22		it's not very successful.
23	Q.	Okay. And that's at the 14-40 mark, and then
24		at the 15-10 mark on the next page, where

ТОНИТАЗЕН ЧЮ А 🚯 РЕИСАВО Т.В. 331-6969

INSU .

ţ

. 7

		2-19
1		we've just stopped it, she says you see,
2		it says, "I think she's still scared to talk
3		to me"
4	A.	Right.
5	Q.	Susan Kelley's talking to the puppets
6	A.	Right.
7	Q.	as if
8	Α.	She's imputing a motivation to Jacqueline
9		about why she's saying no. I mean, she's not
10		saying, "Oh, maybe she's saying no because
11		nothing happened. Or maybe you don't
12		remember. Or maybe nothing happened." The
13		message is, you're not telling us because
14		you're scared to tell.
15	Q.	Interviewer bias?
16	A.	Well, it's a technique that's used that
17		reflects interview bias. It's a way to create
18		an atmosphere of allegation or fear to tell
19		the child: People are scared, and in order to
20		help us, and that you're not scared anymore,
21		you should tell us.
22	Q.	Okay. You know, what we're doing here is,
23		we're playing some of the tapes and stopping
24		them to get your comments, but let me just

5

Ú

-	L	2 - 2 0
		ask you, is it important to keep in mind that
2		all of these things are happening in one
. 3		setting. I mean, the child is not
4		experiencing it as we're experiencing it?
5	A.	Absolutely not. This child is living in an
6		atmosphere or in a community where these
7		beliefs are being talked about all the time.
8		She this child is in therapy, where, you
9		know, I don't know what's being discussed,
10		but her fear, her whatever, so this is a
11		child where, you know, she's not coming into
12		this cold. It's very much within her own
13		experience.
14	Q.	And the parents' meeting from the very outset
15		brought it within the home of the child?
16	Α.	That was the beginning.
17	Q.	Right. Okay.
18		And that makes it different from your
19		research insofar as you don't bring in
20		children for your research studies that have
21		been bombarded with questions within their
22		own home before they're even brought in?
23	A.	The children in our research studies have
24		experienced interviews that are pale versions
l		are pale versions

3

FORM LASE OND A (PENGAD • 1- J-631-6989

X.

2 - 211 of whatever has gone on in any of these 2 criminal cases. I mean, the interviews that 3 they're exposed to are a twenty-minute slice of their life, and then there's no 4 repercussions for whatever they say. They go 5 on with their daily duties, and they may see 6 7 us a week later. But there's nothing in between, and there's certainly not the same 8 kind of emotional spill over and coercion, in 9 10 fact, to tell what happened. 11 Now, let's go on to -- what we're Q. Okay. going to see here, I left off where Susan 12 13 Kelley says, "What's that called," and the child says, "A bum." Do you see that? 14 15 Α. Okay. 16 THE COURT: Page? 17 MR. WILLIAMS: 242. 18 THE WITNESS: 242, about four lines 19 down. 20 THE COURT: Yup. 21 MR. WILLIAMS: Yeah, let's play 22 that. 23 [Videotape played.] 24 [Videotape stopped.]

.

200

2-22 [By Mr. Williams:] 1 2 Now, let's focus on what we just saw there, Q. 3 that last part where she goes through the 4 body parts. Do you see that? 5 Α. Mm-hmm. We just saw that. And then she gets to, "What 6 Q. do you call that, " on page 244; her answer, 7 "A dinky." And then there's a follow-up on 8 9 that. 10 Α. Mm-hmm. 11 There was no follow-up on --Q. 12 THE COURT: Doctor, I'm going to need 13 you to answer yes. 14 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. 15 THE COURT: I've given you a lot of 16 leeway prior to now. 17 Α. Yes, I see that. Okay. And there's no follow-ups on any of the 18 Q. 19 other body parts. In other words, we get to 20 the dinky, then there's a follow-up? 21 Α. That's right. But nothing on the mouth, the eyes, the nose, 22 Q. 23 etcetera? 24 Α. That's right.

21-0303

ş

9

2-23 1 Q. Now, is that atypical in these Kelly 2 interviews, because we're not going to be able to see them all in this hearing? 3 4 Α. No, this is -- we saw this also with No. 5 B**uilder** where she said to J "Where did the clown touch you, " and 6 7 's naming the arms, the whatever, and J 8 then Kelley comes back again and says, "Well, 9 what about" -- I can't remember, "On the peepee," or whatever. But there is this focus 10 on these bottom parts that she's interested 11 12 in having the children name and talk about. 13 And there are not similar questions about 14 other parts, which is a technique that should 15 be used by good interviewers. "Did someone 16 touch you on the arm, or did someone ever 17 touch you on a funny way on the nose, " just 18 to know that when you get these answers from 19 children for other parts, that you can evaluate it within their own experiences. 20 All right. Just another forty seconds or so 21 Q. 22 and then we'll stop it. 23 Α. Okay. We'll just go to the bottom of page B-244. 24 Q.

~.

10/97D

-	2-24 [Videotape played.]
2	
(*)	
4	Q. I just want you to comment on, again, the
5	
6	
7	help hercause mommy" Now she's
8	invoking the mother here, that's what I want
9	you to focus on.
10	A. Well, this is a technique again that is a way
11	to induce children to talk. We used it in
12	Monkey-Thief. It's very helpful for children
13	to talk; the other children told us; it's
14	very good when you tell us things like this.
15	It's very helpful to us.
16	When we combine this with the other
17	kinds of suggestive techniques that are used
18	here, this is where we started to get very
19	high assent rates also.
20	Q. Now, rooted root your answer in the fact
21	that she's this child has experienced all
22	of these types of questioning that we've gone
23	over. She's now reinvoking the helping theme
24	and now has brought her mother into it. Does

FORM LASEF JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-€ 631-6969

Ĉ

	1	2-25 the fact that the mother has obviously been
	2	involved in the questioning of this child as
	3	a result of the parents' meeting and now
	4	bringing the mother into it, is that a good
	5	idea? In other words, the child is now in
	6	there with Susan Kelley, is now saying,
	7	"Because you can help us," and essentially,
8	3	"mommy wants you to help?"
9) A.	
10		Well, it's just adding it's just another
11		form another way of adding to the coercion
12		of the interview. I can't tell you that
13		there's been a scientific study that's been done on it, but
14	Q.	In fact
15		
16	Q.	the more we do Hmm?
17	2.	You mean, there's been no scientific study to
18	A.	factor out the mother?
19		Exactly.
20	Q.	Right. But you can say that that's another
20		suggestive force
	A.	Absolutely
22	Q.	applied on the child?
23	A.	It's, "Tell us what happened. You'll feel
24		better when you tell us. You're going to help
•		

07901

•

6869-169+ 🕴 🕒 LENGAD + 1 - 1631-6889

X.2

_	2 - 26
1	the other kids. You'll help me."
2	Q. Now, let me just see if I can kind of
3	symbolically represent what you're saying.
4	
5	
6	there was a variety of names that would be
7	mentioned, and then you testified yesterday
8	and this morning that the focus would be with
9	the follow-up questions on Cheryl, Tooky or
10	Violet?
11	A. Right.
12	Q. Would it be accurate to say that what's
13	happening is, it's kind of the
14	interviewers are funneling it down to three
15	people, Cheryl, Tooky or Violet, in other
16	words, like a funnel effect?
17	MS. ROONEY: Objection to the form.
18	Leading.
19	THE COURT: It is, but I'm going to
20	give leeway to both of you. Overruled.
21	A. What the interviewers do, is, they focus
22	their questions. They have a mass of data
23	sometimes, not all the time, but sometimes
24	children make lots of allegations and they

3

•

FORM LASER BUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

		2 - 27
1	•	focus on certain elements of those
2		allegations. And if you want to call it a
3		funnel, you can call it a funnel, but you can
4		also just call it a focus.
5	Q.	A focus. And is that also true I just want
6		to make sure that what we're seeing on this
7		tape is not an atypical phenomena. We see it
8		with the body parts, remember the
9	A.	The body parts, the children the children
10		are specifically asked about touching and
11		certain parts of their body.
12	Q.	So we get the focus or
13	A.	Body parts
14	Q.	the funneling effect down to the private
15		parts?
16	A.	Yes.
17	Q.	Now, we start yesterday we talked about,
18		at the parents' meeting, the parents were
19		instructed to question about magic and secret
20		rooms?
21	Α.	And clowns.
22	Q.	And clowns?
23	Α.	Yes.
24	Q.	Let's just focus on the magic and secret

FORM LASER L , D A 🕤 PENGAD • 1-40 J1-6989

U/6/01

5

		2 - 2 8
1		rooms, that is a location?
2	A.	Right.
3	Q.	Did in reviewing the Susan Kelley
4		interviews as well as the DSS and police
5		reports, did you find whether there were
6		questioning questions going on about those
7		two rooms?
8	A.	Well, in the DSS and police reports, it's
9		hard for me to tell what they were questioned
10		about, but there are notations: knows
11		location or doesn't know location of secret
12		room or magic room, so I assume they were
13		asked about those. And in Susan Kelley
14		interviews we saw yesterday, certainly in
15		Jenny's, that she was asked about a magic
16		room or a secret room, and in the other ones
17		that I've reviewed
18	Q.	And
19	A.	this kind of questioning takes place.
20	Q.	And did you notice in the questioning about
21		locations, geography, like magic room, secret
22		room, did any of the children talk about
23		other locations, not necessarily where abuse
24		took place, but just in the course of the

FORM LASER LUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-81. 031-6989

Ę

		2 - 2 9
1		interviews would mention
2	A.	They went to they talked about going to a
3		zoo some child talked about going to a
4		zoo. They talked about swimming at Vi's
5		house. Those are the two that I remember
6		most, but they do talk about other locations.
7	Q.	Do you recall a field trip?
8	A.	The field trip I recall is to the zoo.
9	Q.	Okay. So and then, let me just ask you in
10		terms of so we don't have to belabor the
11		point with the videotape did you find
12		whether the same phenomena was happening when
13		the child would assent, agree about
14		something about a magic room or secret room,
15		that there would be a whole host of follow-
16		ups, but when, say, the child mentions a zoo
17		or
18	Α.	I never remember their really being
19		questioned about the zoo or even going to a
20		circus. We saw
21	Q.	Exactly.
22	Α.	Maybe this child talked about going to a
23		circus, but it was kind of quickly dropped
24		over. It wasn't, "Tell me`about the circus."

1	L .	2-30 It was, "No.'I want to know about when the
2	2	clown came to Fells Acres."
3	Q.	So we see the same effect with the location?
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	It gets funneled down to basically FADS, and
6		more specifically, magic or secret room.
7		
8		Now, if at trial children are giving
		testimony specifically about Cheryl, Tooky
9		and/or Vi, private parts, about Fells Acres,
10		and a magic and a secret room, and they're
11		not talking in general terms or bringing in a
12		whole host of other names, or a whole host of
13		other body parts, a whole host of other
14		locations, in view of your research, is that
15		a surprising phenomenon?
16	A.	No.
17	Q.	Why not?
1.8	A.	Well, I mean, first of all, by the time we
19		get to trial, we're two to three years down
20		the line for some of these children who have
21		been questioned and have been thinking about
22		these kinds of things. So the fact that they
23		focus on these is I mean, it's not
24		surprising at all. I mean, these are the

FORM LASEL ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8. J31-6989

10/97D

2-31 kinds of questions that they were prepared 1 2 for; that they were -- I mean, they weren't 3 asked at trial about other kinds of things. I mean, it really was -- what were they asked 4 at trial; not what did they say at trial. 5 6 Okay. Now, let's move on to M Ο. 7 I don't have my notes. Α. I think we've seen a lot of -- we've seen 8 Q. 9 some videotapes, so we'll just go quickly 10 through Management, and if the Commonwealth wants to delve into it, they can do that. But 11 12 let's just quickly go through Management on the time line to see what her experience was. 13 14 Tell me, did -- we have something that happens before the parents' meeting? 15 Right. Four days before the parents' meeting 16 Α. the mother finds out about the allegations. I 17 think she hears about it on television. I'm 18 19 not sure. Anyway, she questions M about FADS, and Manager says she's happy 20 21 about school. And in response to the mom's 22 question, she says nothing weird happened. So we have: school's okay. 23 Okay. Then on 9/12, is Michelle's mother one 24 Q.

10/97D

	-	2 - 3 2
	1	of those who attended the parents' meeting?
2	2 A.	On 9/12 the mother attends the parents'
	3	meeting.
4	Q.	And did you find in the record something
5	5	about what Michelle's mother recalls about
6	5	instructions given at the meeting?
7	A.	The parents were instructed to question the
8		children about the magic and secret room and
9		clowns, and according to the mother, they
10		were told not to take no for an answer.
11	Q.	Okay. Then what happens next?
12	A.	Then so that's 9/12. The next day the
13		mother takes Michelle to the pediatrician.
14		It's unclear why. I think at trial I think
15		the appointment was made, she wanted forms
16		filled out to go to a new day care. At any
17		point, at this point, the mother is not
18		concerned about sexual abuse. She doesn't
19		report any behavioral problems or any
20		concerns that anything had happened at Fells
21		Acres.
22	Q.	Okay. And then on September 17th, do you have
23		notations for that?
24	Α.	Yes. Here the mother visits the police

3

ť

7

FORM LASER LUND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80-631-6989

Ę

2 - 331 station, and again, is advised as to the kinds of questions to ask. And I have a note 2 here that Detective Byrne told her that just 3 because a child says no means that sometimes 4 5 they're -- doesn't mean anything because sometimes they're afraid to tell. 6 7 So at that point, Mrs. T says, "Well, she'll try to question her for a few 8 9 days." 10 Q. Okay. And then the next forensically 11 significant event from the records? Well, either -- it's not clear when -- it's 12 Α. either on the 17th or the 18th, but Mrs. 13 T s boyfriend questions M 14 that point, Michelle says that Tooky 15 16 photographed children; Vi pulled down her 17 pants and hit her. 18 My notes are not clear -- yes, and then on the 18th, there's a note that Cheryl 19 20 inserted a purple wand into her bottom. Do you recall what the occupation was of the 21 Q. 22 boyfriend? 23 Α. He was a police officer. 24 Not in Malden, but he was THE COURT:

2-34 a police officer in some police department? 1 2 MR. WILLIAMS: I don't know where. 3 THE COURT: You don't know. Okay. [By Mr. Williams:] 4 Okay. And then on 9/19? 5 Ο. 6 Α. 9/19, she's interviewed by Dr. Brant. 7 Can you say anything about that interview, by Q. 8 the way? 9 (No verbal response.) Α. 10 Q. Why not? I don't have notes about it. 11 Α. 12 THE COURT: And there's nothing in 13 the transcript of the trial? 14 THE WITNESS: Well, actually, it's 11 not -- I have some things written down here, 15 but I couldn't get it from my record. I don't 16 know where I got it from, but according to 17 18 Brant --19 MS. ROONEY: Objection. 20 THE WITNESS: Okay. I'm glad not to 21 testify about it. 22 THE COURT: Sustained. [By Mr. Williams:] 23 September 20th? 24 Q.

U/8/01

1-6989

FORM LASER B D A CO PENGAD . 1-800.

ŧ

A. September 20th. Okay. This is -- this takes a little bit of -- you have to -- September 20th. Michelle is interviewed by the police and DSS. Kirwin is the DSS worker. I don't know who the police person is. It's written down someplace.

Now, during this interview there are a number of suggestive techniques that are used. First of all, the dolls are brought out. She wants to play with the dolls. She undresses the dolls. But -- and drawings were used also. So these naked drawings are also used.

During this interview, there are comments in both the police and DSS file that tell us that there are other suggestive forces, such as, this child would frequently refuse to elaborate on these topics and had to be led back by Kirwin to the subject.

Q. Okay. Is that something that you saw -- that phrasing --

22 A. Yes.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

Q. -- "had to be led back to the subject," is something you saw in the report?

2-35

2-36 1 That's in the police report. Α. Okay. What does that tell you about the 2 Ο. 3 nature of the questioning? What it tells me is that Manager would say 4 Α. no, or nothing, and that the questions would 5 have to be rephrased, or repeated, or they 6 didn't give up; they continued to ask her. 7 MS. ROONEY: Objection. I move to 8 strike. She's speculating as to what Michelle 9 10 said or didn't say. 11 MR. WILLIAMS: She's drawing --12 THE COURT: No. Overruled. 13 The drawings that you say were 14 introduced --15 THE WITNESS: Yes. 16 THE COURT: -- showing naked --17 THE WITNESS: Yes. 18 THE COURT: -- bodies, that is, the 19 child was not asked to draw --20 THE WITNESS: No. 21 THE COURT: -- something? 22 THE WITNESS: They had -- I'm not sure if you saw these in the videotapes, and 23 I'm not sure if they used the exact same 24

コンネンロ

Ę

FORM LASER ND A 🕑 PENGAD • 1-8(31-6989

2-37 ones, but these are pictures of the fronts 1 and backs of adults and children, males and 2 females, and the children were asked to look 3 at them and to circle things or to talk about 4 5 them. 6 [By Mr. Williams:] And just to seal off the point, do you recall 7 Q. if Susan Kelley used anatomical drawings as 8 9 well? No. I mentioned I think we saw that on the 10 Α. 11 tape. She used those in most every single 12 interview she used. 13 Ο. In addition to the dolls? 14 Α. Absolutely. 15 THE COURT: How old is M at this time? 16 17 THE WITNESS: M is four or five. I have it written down here at the very 18 beginning of my report. At the beginning of 19 20 my report --21 THE COURT: Do we know the date of 22 birth? THE WITNESS: She's four years old. 23 MR. WILLIAMS: She's four years old. 24

2 - 3 8 1 The record will speak for itself. 2 THE WITNESS: She's a young one. They're all young. 3 4 Do you want me to continue? Α. Yes. Just to complete the DSS and police 5 Q. involvement, please? 6 7 Well, what happens in this interview is that Α. she's inconsistent. She says -- they ask her, 8 "Do you like school?" She says she hates it. 9 Later on she says she misses school. She says 10 she saw a friend -- her friend B 11 clothes on but that there were no naked 12 pictures at school. She says there was no 13 14 magic room. And here the mother is asked to 15 come in and help interview. 16 Who's asking the mother to come in to help Q. 17 with the interview? I think that Kirwin does because she explores 18 Α. 19 the concepts of the clown, and it says, 20 "explores concept of clown." And M says, "My mother knows." So the mother comes 21 in and asks Manager about the clown. 22 All right. Let me stop you there for a 23 Q. moment. First of all, what does your research 24

2-39 1 say about the propriety of having multiple 2 people -- multiple adults in an interview 3 session? 4 Α. The more people there are in an interview session, the more questions can be asked to a 5 child. So it just doubles the force of an 6 interview. And it's highly unusual to have 7 more than one person interviewing a child. 8 Now, on one of the overlays, the components 9 Q. of suggestive interviews --10 11 Α. Mm-hmm. 12 -- one of the items of a suggestive Ο. interviewing technique is, you put down, 13 14 "authority figures?" 15 Α. Right. Would a mother be considered, from the 16 Q. perspective of a child, to be an authority 17 18 figure? 19 Well, the mother would -- there are two Α. things in terms of -- there are two important 20 21 points in terms of that suggestive interviewing technique of high status. One 22 is, we know from the research that children 23 are much more to be swayed suggestively by 24

0/97D

PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989 Θ FORM LASER LUND A

credible adults than by non-credible. So if 1 an adult says, "I know about it," or "I know 2 about the situation, " then a child is much 3 more likely in fact to fall sway to those 4 5 things than if someone comes in and says, "I don't really know about this, " then the child 6 7 is much less likely to. 8 So I think that's an important point here where this mother has been questioning 9 the child, and has been told that there is a 10 magic room and a secret room and a clown. 11 12 Now, the second part of that is that there's a study by Gail Goodman that suggests 13 that when children are interviewed by someone of high status, such as a policeman, that children's reports are much more likely to be inaccurate than when -- than someone of lower status. So we have those two combined. So you have the police or high status Q. individuals, and then you have the -- what I'll call the mother factor? Α. Right. Okay. All right. Anything else about the 9/20 Q. -- the September 20th involvement of DSS

J-631-6989 PENGAD . 1. FORM LASE JOND A 🚯

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

10/97D

2 - 4 0

		2 - 4 1
1		workers?
2	Α.	I just want to quickly look at my notes here
3		to make sure I haven't left anything out.
4		She's asked to name the dolls. And she
5		here she talks about someone by the name of
6		Al who punches her. And so Al's name comes
7		out.
8	Q.	Now, does Al this person Al
9	A.	Yeah.
10	Q.	is that
11	A.	Al comes out
12	Q.	an unusual name that this child has been
13		throwing out?
14	A.	No. Originally I think there were the
15		mother originally said she's talking about
16		Al. So that was really the first person she
17		was talking about was Al, and I think Al was
18		hitting her.
19	Q.	What about other children, do other
20		children
21	A.	I see Al a lot.
22	Q.	Okay. And are we seeing this phenomena
23		I'll try to symbolically represent here with
24		respect to Al were there follow-up

2-42 questions on Al with the same degree of 1 2 intensity as there is with Cheryl, Tooky and 3 Vi? Well, the only -- the Susan Kelley interviews 4 Α. are the only ones where I can really look at 5 6 that, and I don't really see that that happens to the same degree. 7 8 Okay, now there's one more thing that 9 happens here. Mom asked -- mom asked if the clown was at Miss Vi's house, and Cheryl 10 (sic) stated, "No, but he rode by." And 11 12 then --13 Q. Michelle. 14 -- Manager says that the clown had a magic Α. wand and it was purple. And the mother said, 15 "You told me that Miss Vi put a purple thing 16 17 in your bum. Was it a magic wand?" Michelle stated, "No. It was a thermometer. It was in 18 19 my bum." And --20 So what are we seeing from that reference Q. that the mother is saying to the child, is 21 22 that --Well, originally -- this shows that the 23 Α. mother comes in and is saying to the child, 24

10.37.01

2.531.62/09

1 . 11.2.2.2.1

2 - 4 3 1 "Let's talk about what you told me before." 2 And who knows about the reliability of what 3 the child said before. And here you have the 4 child either contradicting the mother, or 5 changing her testimony, or who knows what's 6 happening, but it just points to, at the very 7 early stage of this investigation, the 8 unreliability of this witness. 9 THE COURT: Where are you --10 MS. ROONEY: Objection. I move to 11 strike her comment on the reliability of the 12 witness. 13 THE COURT: I'll strike the portion 14 of the answer that deals with the 15 unreliability of the witness. That portion is 16 struck from the evidence. 17 Where are you reading from? 18 THE WITNESS: This is in the appendix 19 A, page 308. And I also think it -- I don't 20 know, I don't think it's in my affidavit. 21 It's right here (indicating). 22 And then, you know --Α. 23 THE COURT: Just wait for the next 24 question.

10/97D

~0.631-6909

1		2 - 4 4
2		THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. No, I'm Okay.
3		
		Mr. Williams:]
4	Q.	When do your notes reflect, or do you
5		recall, after Managements shown the
6		anatomical drawings, which takes place after
7		she was shown the dolls, so there's the
8		dolls; now the anatomical drawings, whether
9		M EANNE associates the male nude figure with
10		anybody?
11	A.	Okay. She say's it's B arbo S amu a.
12	Q.,	She associates the naked male to a person
13		named Brian?
14	A.	She looks at the preschool boy and says it's
15		B ARDO S SA D O S.
16	Q.	Okay.
17	A.	Can I comment on something else about
18	Q.	What other significant fact are you seeing in
19		the record?
20	A.	Well, I think that this is a problem with
21		this child in general; that when she's shown
22		the anatomical doll drawings, she stated
23		she can't pick out a picture that looks like
24		her. And I think that it's the same thing

10/6/D

"... 🕑 iLNGAD•1 1631-6909

Ĵ

2 - 4 5 1 before with the dolls, that she won't 2 identify who the dolls are. 3 Now, one major hypothesis that comes to mind is this child doesn't truly 4 5 understand that these dolls are supposed to represent herself, or that these drawings are 6 supposed to represent herself; that she can't 7 find that link. So these questions that are 8 now going to ever be asked with her with 9 10 dolls, or with drawings, when she makes responses to them, one has to hold in mind 11 12 that this child may not really be 13 understanding that she's showing what's 14 actually happening because she doesn't understand that these are supposed to be 15 symbols for real things. 16 17 Q. Are we ready to move on to September Okay. 18 24th? 19 Α. Yes. September 24th. 20 This also involved DSS and the police? Q. Yes. This is a ninety-minute interview, four 21 Α. 22 adults are present --23 Q. Four adults? 24 Α. Yes.

		2 - 4 6
1	Q.	Can you identify those four adults from the
2		record?
3	A.	The police, DSS, ME. Term and her boyfriend.
4	Q.	Okay.
5		THE COURT: This is the gentleman
6		who's a police officer?
7		THE WITNESS: Yes.
8	[Ву	Mr. Williams:]
9	Q.	What does M utterview? say in this interview?
10	A.	I'm just going to the transcript.
11		(Witness examines document.)
12		Well, we can
13		THE COURT: Page?
14		THE WITNESS: I'm looking at page
15		309.
16	A.	Okay. What happens here is that they review
17		her past disclosure, whatever that is. She
18		then describes a good clown by the name of
19		Hippo. My understanding is there was a clown
20		by the name of Hickle (phonetic spelling) who
21		did come to school. And there's a bad clown,
22		and she said the bad clown might have been
23		John.
24		Then we go to this section and I

C LEAS DALES IN BALEBUL

2 - 471 think I should read it out loud -- "I asked 2 Michelle to help me describe the clown, " okay. "I asked Manager to help me draw the 3 . clown. I drew the clown under M 4 $^{\prime}$ s direction. She gave me an orange crayon and 5 asked me to draw the hair; blue crayon for 6 feet and hands; and for his body, at this 7 point, Manage took the orange crayon and 8 drew between his legs what she described as 9 10 the clown's penis." Who invoked the word penis? 11 Q. 12 Who knows. Α. 13 Q. Okay. Unclear. It could be: What was that. I don't 14 Α. 15 know. Was that the clown's penis? I don't 16 know. 17 It could have been: What's that? That's 18 the clown's penis. One can not tell from the record how this 19 20 came out. 21 "I then inquired if M touched the 22 penis with her mouth." Who's saying that, the writer of the report? 23 Ο. 24 Α. Kirwin.

10/97D

-UHM LASEH ND A CO PENGAD • 1-81 31-6989

2 - 4 8 1 Q. Kirwin is --2 That's who it is? Let me just make -- it's Α. 3 Kirwin. 4 All right. It's the DSS person? 4 Q. 5 Α. Right. 6 Ο. Whoever that is? 7 Right. So we have a clown with something in Α. between its legs, and the worker asks, "Did 8 you touch the clown's penis with your mouth?" 9 10 Q. Okay. "Mana says, 'Yes.'" 11 Α. And then what happens when the child says, 12 Q. 13 "Yes?" "I gave Margare -- Yes. Worker then gave 14 Α. 15 -- and there's a word missing to M show, it must be doll -- "to show me what 16 happened with the clown's penis." 17 18 Q. And then what happens? 19 "Using the dolls, without hesitation, Α. then turned around. The dolls are 20 M behind us on the couch. She selected the 21 adult male doll and performed what appeared 22 23 to be fellatio." Okay. That happens on 9/24? 24 Q.

012

toutor He^c

Э

Ξ

1	A.	2-49 Yup.
2	Q.	Let's back up for a moment. You said that
3		Mentioned the clown Hippo?
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	Do you recall whether in reviewing the Susan
6		Kelley interview notes whether Susan Kelley
7		asked any of the children about Hippo the
8		clown?
9	A.	I don't think she ever mentioned the name
10		Hippo. I think the children talked about bad
11		clowns and good clowns, and she asked them
12		about bad clowns.
13	Q.	So even though there was and this occurred
14		before the Susan Kelley interview, is that
15		right?
16	A.	Yes. This is September 24th.
17	Q.	Okay. So this child is telling these adults
18		that she's aware of Hippo the clown; she had
19		seen at day care?
20	Α.	Right.
21	Q.	What can you tell me about this episode
22		regarding Management and the penis?
23	A.	Well, what the way I read this record is,
24		there's a clown they're drawing a clown

0/6/01

FORM LASER - ND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-81 - 331-6989

X.,...

2-50 1 I haven't talked about drawing, but --2 they're drawing a clown; somehow or other something orange gets on it, and somehow or 3 other M**MANNE** identifies it as a penis, and 4 she's asked this very direct question, "Did 5 you touch the clown's penis with your mouth?" 6 7 The child says, "Yes." 8 What we know from the studies that I've reviewed in my brief and here, is, you 9 ask children those kinds of questions, half 10 the time they're going to get it -- they're 11 12 going to -- it's a crap shoot. They're going to say, yes; maybe yes is right. But I mean, 13 these are not the questions you ask children. 14 15 In the anatomical doll studies, "Did the doctor touch your bum?" "Yes." Half the 16 time the children were right; half the time 17 18 they were wrong. 19 Then she's told, "Show me on the doll what happened." This is exactly what we did 20

22 Q. Right.

> "Show us on the doll how the doctor touched Α. your bum." For kids who didn't have their bum

in our anatomical doll studies.

3**31-6**989 PENGAD + 1-8. € FORM LASER JUD A

U797D



21

23

24

2-51 touched, some of them didn't touch, but for 1 some of them who did, not only did they touch 2 the bum, inserted fingers into the bum; 3 sometimes inserted other objects into the 4 5 bum. We saw one child in the videotape actually 6 Q. hammering a stick into the vagina, do you 7 8 recall that? 9 Α. Yes. What do you recall about that child's 10 Q. 11 pediatric exam? That was a child who had -- who was in what we 12 Α. call the "no genital exam condition," where 13 14 nothing was touched. So that child, nothing was touched and she's 15 Q. 16 hammering it in? 17 Α. Right. 18 Do you remember yesterday you talked about Q. when a child begins to talk -- weaves a false 19 narrative about something. You said something 20 about the sky's the limit; the truth doesn't 21 constrain the story that --22 It can expand and elaborate and grow. 23 Α. Is that one explanation for that particular 24 Ο.

10/97D

PENGAD • 1-8(31-6989

FORM LASER . VD A 🕤

Ę

2-52 1 child engaging in that very aggressive act? 2 Well, this is the first allegation so we're Α. 3 not--No, I'm talking about the child that we saw 4 Q. on the videotape, the research? 5 Oh, I'm sorry. Oh, yes. I mean -- yes. 6 Α. 7 All right. And the pattern of questioning in Q. that child and the research, who had no 8 genital -- whose genitals were never touched 9 but we see on the videotape is hammering the 10 stick into her vagina, tell me what you 11 recall about the sequence of questioning or 12 13 the pattern of questioning; how did that come 14 about--15 Α. In the videotape? 16 Q. -- in the videotape, yes. Well, in the first interview where you saw 17 Α. she was interviewed by me after the 18 pediatrician, and that was our standard 19 protocol: Did he do this; show me on the 20 doll? And the child denied, as you saw on 21 that videotape that she had been touched. And 22 she didn't want to show on the doll. 23 24 And then what happened was, a few

taikia H

101 1 - 01.1 01.1 1 1

Э

days later, actually, I went to visit her at her house and I had the dolls in my car, and asked the parents if it would be okay to bring them out. And at that time we brought the dolls out and she played with them, and started doing some sexually suggestive things with the doll. We don't -- this is not shown on that videotape.

9 Q. Right.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

J1-6989

PENGAD • 1-80

Θ

A Of

FORM LASER

Those are -- I have notes on that. And I was-10 Α. 11 - I came out and told the father what was happening, and he said, "Do you want me to 12 video -- shall we put this on videotape at 13 14 this point?" And I said, "No. Let's just 15 leave it alone. Let me come back again." So it was the third interview with this child 16 17 where I went back again and brought the dolls 18 in; the father was there, and then you saw this whole thing spontaneously -- well, not 19 spontaneously because we were asking her, 20 "Did anything happen at the doctor's office. 21 Here are the dolls. Show me." 22 23

24

So --

Q. It's somewhat similar to what we see with

2-53

		2 - 5 4
1		Manager. You give the child the doll and
2		then the person asks, "Show me on the doll?"
3	A.	Right. And in fact, we have the September
4		20th interview with Management where the dolls
5		are brought out and it doesn't seem that
6		well, this doesn't happen, right. So this is
7		repeated I think what's important is that
8		we have repeated exposure and repeated
9		questioning. We never see this with these
10		children when they're first questioned, that
11		these kinds of behaviors come out. And in
12		terms of my expertise, this is very
13		concerning.
14	Q.	Disconcerting
15	A.	In concerning.
16	Q.	Oh, okay.
17	A.	Concerning.
18	Q.	In the Pediatrician Study, did you ask the
19		parents to become involved in the
20		questioning, or to take on an emotional
21		stance with respect to the pediatric exam
22		such that you could replicate something like
23		the parents' meeting?
24	Α.	We told I mean, we told the parents that

FORM LASER build A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800-031-6989

10/97D

Ċ

		2 - 5 5
1		they could be in the room with us; not to
2		talk to the kids.
3	Q.	What about in these time intervals between
4		interviews?
5	A.	Well, the one I showed you was the parents
6		didn't do any we didn't tell the parents
7		to do anything. And there are other things.
8		They didn't talk to the child during that
9		time.
10	Q.	Okay. All right. Is there anything
11		forensically significant that you feel we've
12		left out?
13	A.	Is there something else there?
14	Q.	I'm asking you.
15	A.	Well, there are other things that go on, but
16		I think that here you have an allegation that
17		involves fellatio with a bad clown, and
18		that's what comes out here. There are other
19		allegations. It now turns out that she saw a
20		magic room, where before she denied it; that
21		Tooky does things that before Al used to
22		do; and there are other allegations that come
23		out but the major one is the fellatio with
24		the clown.

10.9.0

FURMLASER Suind 🍙 PENGAD • 1-800 Jul 6989

		2 - 5 6
1	Q.	All right. Now, I just want to wind this up.
2	A.	Okay.
3	Q.	In the trial back in 1987 did you review any
4		you reviewed the minutes of the expert
5		testimony by the defense?
6	Α.	Yes.
7	Q.	Okay. We went over that yesterday?
8	A.	Mm-hmm.
9	Q.	Do you recall in reviewing those minutes from
10		the 1987 trial, the prosecutor's cross-
11		examination of the experts in front of the
12		jury about January Bandary's disclosure in
13		the car a few minutes after the Susan Kelley
14		interview?
15	A.	I do.
16	Q.	Okay. What do you recall about the cross-
17		examination by the prosector in front of that
18		jury with respect to Jack Brand B
19		disclosure?
20	A.	That the expert and I can't remember who
21		it is. It's in our notes someplace was
22		specifically asked to explain how J
23		B arrow could make allegations to her mother
24		that were not suggested by Susan Kelley in

C/6/01

LUHM LASEH U A CO PENGAD . 1-80 ,1-6989

Ç.)

1 the previous interview.

~

2	Q.	In other words, how she had how elements
3		of her story to her mother could be different
4		or something that was not mentioned in the
5		Susan Kelley interview?
6	A.	The expert wanted to drew the conclusion
7		that Jennifer's allegations to her mother
8		were the result of this very coercive
9		interview with Susan Kelley, and then the
10		prosecution asks, "Well, how is it possible
11		that Jennifer made allegations to her mother
12		that were not suggested to her by Kelley."
13	Q.	All right. Let me stop you right there.
14		So the defense expert is making the precise
15		point that you're making in this hearing
16		about the Susan Kelley interview?
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	That it's coercive?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	Okay. And the prosecutor is now attacking
21		that opinion?
22	A.	Yes.
23	Q.	Tell me how the prosecutor attacks it, and
24		tell me how the researcher I'm sorry, the
ĺ		

2 - 5 7

2 - 58 1 expert responds? 2 MS. ROONEY: Objection. The record 3 speaks for itself. 4 THE COURT: Overruled. All I have in the notes is, on the cross, 5 Α. Jennifer's disclosure to her parents after 6 this interview contained allegations not 7 discussed in the interview. 8 9 Q. Okay. 10 And the expert said, "I can't explain this." Α. Had no research to back it up? 11 Q. 12 I don't think it had anything to do with Α. 13 research. I don't think he could explain why 14 she could make allegations -- these kinds of 15 allegations if they had not been previously 16 suggested to her. 17 Q. Or mentioned --18 Or mentioned in the Susan Kelley interview. Α. Okay. So let me just -- And the record will 19 Q. 20 speak for itself --21 Α. Yes. 22 -- on this in terms of how the prosecutor Q. phrased the question --23 24 Α. Mm-hmm.

10,3,0

2-59 1 Q. -- regarding that. 2 Α. Yes. Back in 1987, could an expert in this field 3 Q. cite any valid research to actually explain 4 that particular phenomenon of J 5 mentioning things that were not explicitly 6 mentioned in the Susan Kelley interview? 7 8 Α. No, he could not. 9 Can we do that today? Q. 10 Α. Yes, we can. 11 Q. Tell me how? Tell me what research you're 12 referring to? 13 Well, let's start with the Monkey-Thief Α. 14 Study. In Monkey-Thief we suggested things to children about the scenarios of how the thief 15 came in and stole food, or we suggested 16 elements to the children about how the lady 17 found the monkey in the park. 18 19 Over time, children came out with 20 narratives. They repeated narratives over time. When we look at these narratives to see 21 22 what percentage of the narratives contained the children's suggestions, it's only 25 to 23 30 percent of the narratives that actually 24

331-6989

FENGAD • 1-6

Э

V OH

2-60 contain the suggestions. The rest is the 1 child's construction of all kinds of things 2 that were never suggested to the child. 3 4 In the thief scenario, some of the children talk about hitting the thief, 5 shooting the thief. In the monkey scenario, 6 there are all kinds of subplots that the 7 8 children weave-in that are never suggested to 9 them. 10 In the Pediatrician Study, which I talked about first yesterday, we saw that we 11 suggested to the children that the 12 13 pediatrician -- that the research assistant 14 gave the shot, gave the medicine; what did 15 the children do? They also reported that the research assistant examined them. This was 16 17 not in the suggestion. 18 What we know is that once the suggestive process starts, and children start 19 20 weaving stories -- start weaving narratives that, A, you cannot tell true from false 21

narratives, number one.

22

23

24

Number two, the narratives go beyond the suggestions. The children are not merely parroting what's going on, that they're constructing what they think is a narrative. They're using all their knowledge of what's going on; maybe what they've heard before the Susan Kelley interview. I don't really know what J heard before, but that's another possibility.

But you see these things are very generative. So one of the things we've absolutely learned is that when children have been suggestively interviewed and begin to make allegations, you cannot just go from an allegation to try to figure out what its source has been, and then say: Well, everything else that the child has said, since we can't find the source, has to be true. That, from the research studies, we know that a major proportion of the narratives contain details that were never suggested to them but are consistent in many ways with the whole scenario.

22 Q. Okay.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

23

24

(10/97D

PENGAD . 1-8L. J31-6989

Θ

A DN.

FORM LASER

ξ.)

THE COURT: Let me just ask if your testimony, your position is similar about, I

2-61

2-62 think what B**urgers** said regarding animals? 1 2 THE WITNESS: Well, what Billy said 3 regarding animals is along the same way. We know that -- I mean, I don't know if this was 4 ever suggested to him. What I know -- what 5 we've learned about -- in the research about 6 7 Billy's allegations of animals is that when you suggestively interview children, their 8 allegations over time become bizarre or 9 contain bizarre elements, or contain 10 11 fantastic elements. 12 And so, that's -- I mean, I can't 13 tell you whether he saw an animal being 14 chopped up, but I know how he was interviewed, and we know that those kinds of 15 interview procedures do sometimes produce 16 17 these kinds of bizarre allegations, fantastic 18 allegations, and probable allegations in 19 children's stories. 20 [By Mr. Williams:] After all, Dr. Bruck, you weren't there. It 21 Q. may very well be true --22 23 It could be. Α. -- that Billy -- that animals were sacrificed 24 Q.

10/2/1

CU FERGAD - P.U. 31-6989

		2 - 6 3
1		in front of all the teachers at Fells Acres?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	Okay. But there are also other explanations
4		for why that might be false?
5	A.	Yes.
6	Q.	Okay. Again, the record will speak for itself
7		on how the prosecutor cross-examined the
8		experts with respect to J
9		disclosure. But let's assume for the moment
10		that the point of the cross-examination was
11		to communicate to the jury this one-to-one
12		correspondence between a suggestion and a
13		disclosure, and if there is no one-to-one
14		correspondence then we can assume or conclude
15		that the other elements of the story are
16		true. Let's if that's the point that the
17		prosecutor is making, your research says that
18		is a false assumption?
19	A.	That's right.
20	Q.	And the expert in this case was not able to
21		correct that assumption by the prosecutor?
22	Α.	That's correct.
23	Q.	But we can do that today?
24	Α.	Yes.
Į	_	

ĺ

г ОПМ LASEH 2U A 🙂 PENGAD • 1-8(31-6989

 \bigcirc

-		2 - 6 4
1	Q.	Okay.
2		Something that I think we just touched on
3		yesterday, and I want to make sure that we're
4		clear on the record with this.
5		This tainting of children through
6		suggestive interviewing, is it a temporary
7		phenomenon; does it wear off, or have we
8		found that it's permanent? We touched upon
9		it with that child B rank in the mousetrap
10		case where John Stossel
11	A.	В — —
12	Q.	B
13	A.	I can't remember. Yes.
14	Q.	With John Stossel trying to debrief that
15		child?
16	A.	Right.
17	Q.	But eventually will that child, for example,
18		begin to realize that the mousetrap thing
19		didn't really happen or
20	Α.	Well, our understanding from the few follow-
21		up studies we've done with the children is
22		the following: that when that these false
23		reports continue for some time after the
24		suggestive interviewing has stopped. But if

. .

FORM LASEH WUND A S PENGAD • 1-800-631-6969

10/97D

the suggestive interviewing continues, or if the belief systems continue, that the false beliefs are going to continue. So one has to think about it in terms of, when does interviewing stop, right.

Now, I mean, we don't have any very long follow-up studies on children, so it's possible that if the interviewing goes on for months and years, and these reports become firmly established as beliefs, then they could last forever.

What we know from our own studies is that when the interviewing stops and it's very short, that after a period of time some of the children will come to forget. On the other hand, I also know from some very recent studies we've done that when the interviewing techniques are less coercive -- I mean this is very difficult. I don't want to get into this -- but when there's misinformation that's just kind of passed off: Oh, I heard that there was a magic room. Or, I remember being told that, and the children are just, you know, not coerced into an answer, and

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

UIMLASEL //U.A. 😧 PENGAD • 1-6 331-6989

2 - 6 5

they come to in fact say that these things happened, that these beliefs last for up to eighteen months even though there's been no interviewing at all. So we're still at the threshold of understanding the longevity of these things, but in terms of this case, I think it's fair to say that these children -- the interviewing went up -- right up to trial. So, I mean, I don't know, you know, how the suggestions -- I mean, you can say that they

15 this wasn't discussed. So it's sort of a moot question in terms of these children. 16 17 0. There was a reference yesterday from the 18 prosecutor -- I'm referring to the trial transcript of the mother of Jennifer -- that 19 20 the trial transcript indicates that the mother testified that J 21 22 was, quote, "spontaneous?"

were rehearsed, or true memories, or

suggestive for false memories, I don't care

what, but there wasn't a long period where

Is there any research that's been conducted

23 A. Right.

Ο.

24

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

10/97D

PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

FORM LASER BUND A

2 - 6 6

2-67 in connection with suggestibility where you focus on the accuracy of the -- of a mother's We've talked about the birthday report? example. You had researchers' reporting. Now I want to focus specifically on mother's reports.

Right. Well, we've conducted two studies, one Α. on mothers and one on interviewers, actually. But let me talk about mothers.

This is the issue. The issue is when children come to make reports of events, it's very important for the court or anyone to understand, from everything I've talked about today, the context in which these reports have come out. If the reports are truly spontaneous, if they come out at the very first time the child has been questioned, based on the research we've done, we can have a lot of faith or -- that maybe the child is telling us something that's very important.

21 If the reports come out as a result of repeated questioning, of suggestive 22 23 questioning over time, we have much less faith in this.

PENGAD • 1-8---631-6969

Θ

FORM LASER JUND A

10/97D

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

24

Now, the question becomes now of, when it's reported to you that the child has said, for example, the clown stuck a thermometer up my bum, how do you understand the context of that allegation?

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

JI-6969

FENGAD+ 1-80

Θ

FORM LASERE JULA

Now, in 1998, I think we know we have to ask people: Well, how did the child say that? Right. Was it spontaneous? Did you ask a lot of questions? Did it take a lot of time? And when you ask these questions, the next question is, Well, someone gives you answers, how reliable are their answers? Can people really remember how information came out?

And so, we've conducted two studies to examine that issue. And one involved mothers interviewing their children about an event. This is filed and it's in the affidavit. During the event, the mothers didn't know what was happening; the child was playing with our research assistant, and then there was a surprising thing where a man kind of rushed in and tried to take the child's crayon, and then the mother was told to

2 - 6 8

2 - 69interview the child. And half the mother's 1 were told this was a memory experiment where 2 3 later on we'd go back and ask them to remember in detail exactly what words were 4 used; and the other half, the mother's 5 6 weren't told. Anyway --7 Wait. Whoa, whoa. One-half of the mother's Q. were told this was a memory experiment? 8 9 Α. Right. And the other half were told what? 10 Q. The other half were told: We're interested in 11 Α. 12 how you get information from your child. 13 Okay. So it's more neutral? Q. 14 Α. Right. 15 Q. Okay. 16 They weren't warned -- they weren't warned to Α. 17 remember. 18 Q. Okay. 19 THE COURT: I should probably have 20 said this earlier, but both of you have to give some New England speed to your speech. 21 22 THE WITNESS: Oh, slower? 23 THE COURT: A bit slower. 24 THE WITNESS: Okay. I'm fine. I'm

וחומים

531-6969

AUA C FENGAD - H

2-70 1 living in the south now. I should be 2 practicing. 3 THE COURT: Okay. 4 Α. Okay. So the mothers interview their child 5 and they found out about different events. 6 And after the interviews, we transcribed 7 these, from videotape, and then made up 8 memory tests. And two or three -- three days 9 later, two or three days later, we went back and interviewed the mothers. 10 11 Now, let me give you in a nutshell 12 what we found. Overall, the mothers were 13 quite accurate in remembering the content. 14 They weren't a hundred percent, but they 15 could tell you the things that their kids 16 told them. 17 What they had a great deal of 18 difficulty in doing was remembering how they 19 found out about these things. They could not remember if the information was produced from 20 21 a series of suggestive questions, which is 22 probably the most common way to interview 23 children, and the mothers did a lot. A lot of times the mothers in fact reported: No, this 24

۰۰. 10/97D

FORM LASEF, JOND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-6-0-631-6989

was spontaneous. My child just said it. When in fact it was the result of many many suggestive questions.

Mothers couldn't remember if they were the first person to say, "Was there a fireman in the room?" Or whether the child said it first. So you have a great deal of confusion in terms of memory of how conversations are structured.

Now, we found the same thing with our interviewers that I talked about in the Birthday Party Study. We did the same kind of study where -- actually, we brought them back two weeks later -- but these interviewers were allowed to consult notes that they had taken during the interview. We allowed them to do this.

And we asked them about two children of the four they interviewed. We showed them the pictures. We reminded them so that they could remember. And again, we gave them memory tests, and they made the same kinds of errors that mother's made. They couldn't remember if the children's statements were

10/97D

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

FORM LASEF. JOND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-6-0-631-6989

spontaneous, of if they were the result of suggestive questions.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

10/97D

631-6989

PENGAD . 1-6

Θ

A DVC

FORM LASEF.

The interviewers did something else. We put something else into the experiment, which is quite interesting. Also what the interviewers couldn't remember was, what child said what. So they mixed up -- if they were asked to remember what child two said, and -- they often reported maybe what child four said.

Now, if you know anything about human memory, I mean, this really isn't a very surprising event. I mean, we can only retain so much, and we retain the content, and a lot of the structure just falls away.

Now, this is very important in terms of trying to figure out how these children were questioned, and forensically, what this tells us is that we really need hard, electronic copies of these video -- of what the children said. And that's why the Susan Kelley videotapes are so important because it's the first time we really see how spontaneous the children are; how the

1	•	2-73 information comes out. Even though it's way
2		down the line, it does not substitute for
3		these missing first interviews.
4	Q.	Well, in fact, in the Susan Kelley interview
5		of J unio , the entire interview, first
6		interview, J ohn Says nothing about sexual
7		abuse
8	A.	Well, that's true, but it's also the
9		
10		Jennifer the Susan Kelley interview of
11		Jennifer, we know that before then, Jennifer
1.2	Q.	has not made any allegations.
		Right.
13	A.	So that's what counts a little bit more.
14	Q.	Right. But Susan Kelley's report to the
15		mother, even though there's never been an
16		allegation
17	A.	Right.
18	Q.	was what?
19	A.	I
20	Q.	In essence?
21	A.	Is that: Get therapy for this child who's
22		been sexually abused.
23	Q.	Even though there's been no allegation from
24		that child?

U/97D

•

÷+-

FORM LASER LURD A 😧 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

()

2 - 741 Α. That's right. 2 So from your research, it's entirely possible Q. 3 that Susan Kelley actually believed this child was abused, and thought she had heard 4 5 elements of abuse? 6 Α. Yes. 7 MS. ROONEY: Objection. 8 THE COURT: I'll let the answer 9 stand. Overruled. 10 [By Mr. Williams:] I'm going to show you Exhibit 7. Is that the 11 Q. 12 study you've just been describing about mothers' reports? 13 14 Yes. Α. 15 All right. I want you to just summarize --Q. 16 we've been through several hours of this -- I 17 just want you to summarize. What are the most 18 salient observations of the record that you've made here? I know the affidavit goes 19 into it in much more detail. 20 21 Α. Right. I want you to talk about the most salient 22 Q. 23 observations. 24 Okay. The overriding observation is that Α.

079701

PENGAD • 1-80. J1-6989

Θ

FORM LASER LUND A

1 there were no spontaneous disclosures by 2 these children; that even when they were first asked by their parents, these children 3 4 denied any sexual events at Fells Acres. 5 We don't exactly know how many interviews it took. It's more than is in the 6 7 record because we don't -- it's clear that 8 the parents did talk to their children, but 9 we don't know about each talk they had. 10 When they were interviewed by DSS 11 and police, the children still, in the first interviews, did not make allegations. It was 12 only after several interviews that were repetitive, that contained suggestive elements, that children began to make allegations, sometimes about clowns. Sometimes it took much longer for them in fact to get to the defendants. Now, in terms of the research that I do, this is highly significant because what we know is that when children's reports are

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

6969-LC

spontaneous, when they're asked open-ended questions: Did something happen; can you tell me about what happened, and you have a

2-75

2-76 description of event (sic), it's not always 1 correct, but chances are, most of the time 2 3 much of what children say is correct. 4 This did not happen in this case. The 5 research that Stephen Ceci and other colleagues of mine have conducted show that 6 7 when you use elements -- when you have biased 8 interviews --9 THE COURT: Okay. We don't really 10 need to go --11 THE WITNESS: Okay. 12 THE COURT: I mean, you testified 13 about that. Anything else? Any other 14 salient points not already gone into? [By Mr. Williams:] 15 16 Any other salient -- you don't have to go Q. into detail. I just wanted you to 17 18 highlight --19 Well, I think that the disclosure patterns Α. are extremely important. I think that there 20 is enough evidence in the record about the 21 bias of the interviewers: from the beginning, 22 sexual abuse took place, and that's what they 23 wanted the children to talk about. 24

10/97D

FORM LASER WUND A (PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

2-77 1 And those are the -- you know, in 2 terms of my own expertise, those are the 3 things in the record that just absolutely 4 jump out and are impressionable. Okay. Now, I want to finish up by going back 5 Q. to the 1987 trial, because I think you 6 7 understand, Dr. Bruck, that if you're tested 8 -- if the evidence you're providing here was 9 actually considered by a jury and rejected by 10 a jury, Miss LeFave is not entitled to a new 11 trial? 12 I understand that. Α. 13 Okay. Let's assume -- let's not even put a Q. 14 fine, delicate point to it -- let's assume that all the tapes of the Susan Kelley 15 16 interviews were played, okay? 17 Α. Yes. 18 Instead of quibbling over which ones, let's Q. 19 assume all of them were played. And let's 20 assume that experts were on the witness stand 21 giving the exact same critique that you are giving here in the substance of the critique, 22 going painstakingly, line-by-line, giving the 23 exact same critique here; and if that expert 24

PENGAD • 14 831-6989

0/8/01

Э Š

2 - 78 were asked on cross-examination in 1987: Mr. 1 2 Expert, cite me a single study to support 3 your critique of all of these tapes, what 4 would that expert have to say if he or she 5 was honest? They would rely on their clinical intuition 6 Α. to critique those tapes. 7 It would be intuition? 8 Q. 9 Α. Yes. 10 Q. Any research? 11 They could cite some of the research we Α. 12 talked about which, you know, such as, "Isn't 13 this a circle?" 14 I'm talking about --Ο. 15 Α. But there are none on the kinds -- there was 16 no research that they could cite in terms of 17 the kinds of suggestive interviewing techniques that were used in these 18 19 interviews. They would have to rely on their 20 clinical intuitions to make those kinds of 21 statements. 22 Q. Final question. If this same testimony was 23 given in 1998 in front of that exact same jury, would that expert have to rely on 24

10/97D

PENGAD . 1-80. 31-6989

Θ

FORM LASER LUND A

	1	intuition?
	2 A.	No.
	3 Q.	What could that expert what could that
4	Ł	expert rely on?
5	5 A.	The excerpt could rely on the exhibits, on
6	;	about 10 to 20 studies, or even more, to
7		start to understand the interviewing context
8		and the statements the children made.
9	Q.	Thank you.
10		MR. WILLIAMS: No further questions.
11		THE COURT: Before the cross-
12		examination, I do have a couple of questions
13		I wanted to ask the doctor.
14		Did you consider, in the opinions
15		you're offering to the Court, what happened
16		between these suggestive interviews and the
17		trial testimony of the children?
18		THE WITNESS: Right.
19		THE COURT: Including the context
20		and circumstances of how the children were
21		prepared for trial; did they know about each
22		other's testimony; were they ever together in
23		the courtroom; in the courthouse; and the
24		impact of that, if any, on your opinions?

10/97D

FORM LASER L., VD A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80. J1-6989

Ċ

2 - 80 1 THE WITNESS: Right. 2 In writing the affidavit I didn't. I 3 explained why. I explained that in terms of 4 my -- in terms of understanding the 5 allegations, I thought it was important to 6 describe the ground work and what happened 7 before the disclosures came out and how the 8 first disclosures came out. 9 I then -- I mean, I -- I've looked 10 through the record and I see that, you know, these children continued in therapy. They were in homes where the police continued. I saw in the record that they did meet with prosecutors to review testimony. But I really didn't go through all -- all of the things that you -- you considered, but I would imagine if those were there, that it would in fact consolidate their reports, if not memories, of what happened. But my tack was to get them to understand what was associated with the allegations that came out that led to trial; not what happened at trial. THE COURT: Part of what this court is

10/97D

J31-6985

PENGAD . 1-8.

Θ

A DV

FORM LASER

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

interested in is understanding, if in fact

there's been impermissibly suggestive interviewing and other investigative techniques, the impact on those of any rewarding process, or encouragement process, or trial preparation process in reinforcing those views.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

10/11/01

1 LH3AD • 1-806 ...1-6989

CONTRACTOR D

1

THE WITNESS: Well, I'm sure the record is available and if you want me to, I'd be glad to review it for you to bring you more up to date. But in terms of my own expert opinion, you know, once we -- we've shown how far we've gotten these children, and then if there's even more going on, it's only going to solidify or make the allegations go further. It's really the emergence that's really very important to understand.

THE COURT: Along these lines, do you know if any of the children during the interviewing process with Miss Kelley or others, were they told or can you tell if they knew that the school was closed?

THE WITNESS: Oh, they knew the school was closed because they weren't going

2-81

2 - 821 there anymore. I mean, we know with M 2 , for example, that December -- September Т 3 12th, or whatever, her mother was taking her to the pediatrician to put her into a new 4 5 school. And so, the children knew the school 6 was closed. 7 THE COURT: Okay. 8 Before the cross-examination, why 9 don't we take a ten, fifteen minutes recess. (Recess 10:36 a.m.) 10 11 12 (Hearing resumes 10:54 a.m.) 13 14 MS. SULLIVAN: Your Honor, I apologize. Miss Rooney has not yet come back 15 16 from break. 17 THE COURT: Oh, okay. Do you know, is 18 she readily accessible or? 19 MS. SULLIVAN: I can run down after 20 her. We may cross paths. But I'm happy to do 21 that, your Honor. 22 MR. WILLIAMS: Actually, maybe I could just use the time --23 24 MS. SULLIVAN: Oh, I'm told by a

FORM LASER LUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80, 31-6989

10/97D

FORM LAS

2 - 83 spectator that there may be something wrong 1 2 with the elevators. 3 THE COURT: Okay. Did you want to say 4 something? 5 MR. WILLIAMS: Yeah, I just wanted to maybe -- because I was going to ask at the 6 7 conclusion of the day, but since we have a 8 little break --9 MS. SULLIVAN: Your Honor, Miss Rooney is lead counsel. If it's something --10 11 THE COURT: Why don't we wait. We'll 12 take a couple of minutes and give you a 13 chance --14 MS. SULLIVAN: We're only on seven. I 15 think we can try the stairs. 16 THE COURT: Okay. Let me know. I'm right here so let me know when you're ready. 17 18 MS. SULLIVAN: I'm sorry, your Honor. 19 (Recess 10:55 a.m.) 20 21 22 23 24

6989

10/97D

FORM LASER build A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800-031-6989

	1 (He	aring resumes 11:00 a.m.)
	2	aring resumes in:00 a.m.)
3	3	MS ROONEY. Mars T
4		MS. ROONEY: May I proceed, your Honor?
5	5	THE COURT: You may.
6		ind cooki. Tou may.
7	DR.	MAGGIE BRUCK, RESUMED
8		S-EXAMINATION
9		IS. ROONEY:
10	Q.	Dr. Bruck, in your affidavit you indicate
11		that the behavior problems that some of these
12		children displayed, in fact all of these
13		children displayed, may have emerged as a
14		result of the coercive and suggestive
15		interviews in this case?
16	A.	Can you tell me what section we're on?
17	Q.	On page 67 of your affidavit.
18		THE COURT: I'm not sure I have the
19		affidavit. I've got it right here. Thank you.
20		Sixty-seven?
21		MS. ROONEY: Page 67.
22		Yes, I see it, yes.
23		Could you point us to a study to demonstrate
24		that the behavioral symptoms exhibited by

10/97D

I

FORM LASER 6 UND A S PENGAD . 1400- 1490

€ ≱			2 - 8 5
	1		these children came about as a result of a
	2		suggestive interview?
	3	A.	No, I can't.
	4	Q.	Could you demonstrate to us, or could you
	5		indicate to us the results of a study that
	6		demonstrates that a child who has cracking
	7		and fissuring around her labial area is the
	8		result of a suggestive interview?
	9	A.	No, I can't.
	10	Q.	Could you indicate to us a study that
	11		demonstrates that a suggestive interview
٢	12		causes children to have a bump, or a child to
	13		have a bump on their hymen?
	14	Α.	None that I know of.
	15	Q.	Could you indicate to us what study
	16		demonstrates that a suggestive interview
	17		causes children to have vulvitis?
	18	Α.	I don't know of any studies.
	19	Q.	Now, yesterday his Honor asked you a question
	20		about the behavioral symptoms of J
	21		our do you recall that question?
	22	Α.	No, I don't.
9	23	Q.	Do you recall saying you couldn't speak to
	24		the behavioral symptoms of J
	1		

10,97D

ł

FORM LASER E.J. (U A 😧 PENGAD • 1400 J. 16969

0

		2 - 8 6
-	1 A.	
2	2	the behavioral symptoms of J
3	3	were.
4	Q.	Did you review the behavioral symptoms of
5	5	these children?
6	A.	Uhm, I reviewed what was in the record, and
7		we did review the behavioral symptoms at some
8		point, yes.
9	Q.	And June Opposit, six to eight months prior
10		to Fells Acres Day School closing
11	A.	Would you show me in the record where this
12		is?
13	Q.	If you could look with respect to J
14		O mparts , the Susan Kelley interviews, all of
15		the information that you've testified in
16		Appendix B, the testimony of the trial of
17		J OF her mother Cyther of the
18		did you review all that?
19	A.	The trial testimony?
20	Q.	Yes.
21	A.	No.
22	Q.	You didn't look at the trial testimony
23	A.	I did look at the trial testimony but I
24		didn't put it into my affidavit.

ר האור

FUHM LASER (10 A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

Ö

 Q. But you reviewed it? A. At some point, yes. Q. So you reviewed the behavioral symptoms of Jackie Osgood at some point? A. Yes. Q. And you recall that she was exhibiting these 	
 3 Q. So you reviewed the behavioral symptoms of 4 Jackie Osgood at some point? 5 A. Yes. 6 Q. And you recall that she was exhibiting these 	-87
4 Jackie Osgood at some point? 5 A. Yes. 6 Q. And you recall that she was exhibiting these	
 Jackie Osgood at some point? A. Yes. Q. And you recall that she was exhibiting these 	
 5 A. Yes. 6 Q. And you recall that she was exhibiting these 	
2. The you recall that she was exhibiting these	
	<u>a</u>
7 behavioral symptoms, specifically, she was	-
8 crying and didn't want to go to school?	
9 A. You know, I this is really not very clear	•
10 in my memory. I'd have to go back to my	
11 record to review when these when these	
12 first appeared in the record.	
13 Q. Well, Dr. Bruck, assume for the moment that	
14 six to eight months prior to the school	
15 closing, J anuar O genetr was crying because sh	e
16 didn't want to go to school.	
17 A. Mm-hmm.	
18 Q. She didn't want to separate from her mother.	
19 She was having trouble sleeping at night. She	9
20 was wetting herself two to three times during	J
the night. She refused to go to the bathroom	
22 by herself, and all of these behaviors	
23 started six to eight months prior to anyone	
24 saying anything about what was going on at	

🕑 / ETERAD + 1.8C - 31-6964

	1	· · .	Fells Acres?
	2	Α.	Yes.
	3	Q.	Do the interviews of Jack Of Angle have
	4		anything to do with any of those behavioral
	5		symptoms?
	6	A.	If those symptoms preceded the interviews?
ľ	7	Q.	Correct.
ł	в	A.	No.
9	Э	Q.	Now, J anuar B arrison , again, well before any
1(kind of a disclosure was made, well before
11	-		any kind of an allegation was made, started
12			to wet herself after she had been toilet-
13			trained for a number of months; that J
14			Best started to talk as a child again, as
15			a baby again; had difficulty in the bathtub,
16			screaming, "Don't touch me. Don't hurt me;"
17			stomachaches daily; didn't want to go to
18			school; waking up in the middle of the night,
19			screaming, "Don't hurt me. The clown is going
20			to get me," and all of these things are going
21			on before any disclosure is made, could the
22			interviews of Jennifer Bennett have anything
23			to do with any of those symptoms I've just
24			described to you?

UNAL D

-

FOHM LASEF JND A CO PENGAD + 1-5 531-6989

Ó

2 - 8 9 1 Α. They don't, but in the record that I read --2 Well, Dr. Bruck, could they or could they Q. 3 not? 4 Α. If they in fact had happened, then the --5 obviously if they preceded the interviews, 6 the interviews could not have had any effect-7 on those. And with respect to B 8 Q. / L a month before the disclosures started to happen, 9 10 he's exhibiting unusual sexual behavior. He's 11 grabbing his mother's head, trying to put his 12 tongue in her mouth. He's kissing her neck. 13 He's trying to suck on her chest. He's crying and screaming he doesn't want to go to 14 15 school. He had stomachaches all the time, 16 could any of those behavioral symptoms have 17 anything to do with any of the interviews of 18 B 19 MR. WILLIAMS: Your Honor, I don't mean to interrupt. I don't object to the form 20 of the question other than if we could have a 21 22 transcript reference, or is this just a 23 hypothetical? I mean, I'm not sure if she's asking a hypothetical or if she's rooting it 24

10/97D

FORM LASER JOND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-844-631-6989

2-90 1 in the trial transcripts. 2 THE COURT: What would help the 3 Court, Miss Rooney is, ultimately I may agree with you that these things existed or that 4 there's evidence of them as you suggest, but 5 I'd have to agree in order to take her answer 6 7 or her opinion. Therefore, it would help the Court if you would tell us where -- point to 8 9 where these things exist. [By Ms. Rooney:] 10 11 Referring directly to the transcript of the Ο. 12 trial of Cheryl Amirault LeFave, Volume IV, 13 page 62. 14 MR. WILLIAMS: I'm going to object. 15 Your Honor precluded us from making reference 16 to Gerald Amirault's trial --17 MS. ROONEY: I believe I said Cheryl. 18 MR. WILLIAMS: I'm sorry, I thought 19 you said -- my apologies. 20 THE COURT: Okay. What -- where can I? 21 MS. ROONEY: Volume IV, page 62. Who are we talking about? 22 Α. 23 Q. Billy Leary. 24 THE COURT: And who's testifying?

niaini

31-6969

FLNGAD • 1-80

Э

O MALE AND IN

		2-91
. 1		MS. ROONEY: This would be his mother
2	2	who testified under the name of Kerepka at
3		Gerald's trial; and testified under the name
4		of McCarthy at the women's trial. She was
5		married in between them.
6		THE COURT: Okay.
7	[Ву	Ms. Rooney:]
8	Q.	There was testimony that about a year before
9		the school closed in September of 1984, he
10		began to display unusual sexual behavior,
11		tightly grabbing the sides of his mother's
12		head, pulling her head towards her (sic) and
13		sticking his tongue in her mouth. Also
14		kissing her neck and trying to suck on her
15		chest, all happening about a year before the
16		school closed in September of 1984. Could any
17		of those behaviors have anything to do with
18		any of the interviews conducted of B
19		
20	Α.	If those behaviors happened
21	Q.	Yes or no, ma'am, could they have anything to
22		do with those interviews of Berry Lagranties,
23		as the testimony indicated, they started to
24		occur a year before any interviews took
L		•

10/97D

 \bigcirc

1		2-92 place?
2	A.	If they occurred
3		
4	2.	Ma'am, yes or no? Are you having trouble
		understanding my question?
5		No.
6	Q.	Could they have had anything to do with the
7		interviews if, as the testimony indicated,
8		those behaviors began to occur a year before
9		the school closed in September of 1984?
10		THE COURT: And you may assume, for
11		purposes of the question, that they did
12		occur.
13		THE WITNESS: Okay.
14	A.	Can you rephrase. I'm confused. The question
15		is, could the interviews have affected those
16		behaviors if they occurred before.
17	Q.	Exactly.
18	A.	The answer is no.
19	Q.	With respect to M random T ank , could any of
20		the behavior symptoms, again, demonstrated by
21		Mental T prior to anyone making any kind
22		of a disclosure, Manager Table included, the
23		sexualized behavior of coming out and putting
24		her hand between her mother's legs, trying to

10/97D

FORM LASER BOND A 🌒 PENGAD • 1-600-631-5989

 \bigcirc

2 - 93 1 touch her mother's breasts, masturbating in 2 the bath, beginning in December of 1983 and 3 going through January of 1984, and continuing almost nightly complaints of vaginal pain, 4 waking up one to two times a week in pain --5 complaining of pain in her vagina, could any 6 7 of those things have anything to do with any interviews conducted of M 8 9 THE COURT: From where do you get 10 that, please? 11 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, again, I 12 would refer to the testimony of D 13 THE COURT: Trial testimony? 14 MS. ROONEY: I'm sorry. The trial testimony of D**EED**T 15 16 Α. No. 17 Now, Dr. Bruck, you talked about, in some Q. detail, this meeting that occurred at the 18 19 police station. I believe you refer to it as 20 the parents' meeting --21 Α. Yes. -- at the police station in September of 22 Q. 23 1984? You're aware, are you not, Dr. Bruck, that 24

417

10/97D

FORM LASER LUND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-80-031-6989

ć

1		J B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B
2		June Barriers s mother did not even attend that meeting?
3	A.	
		I know that Jack B B B souther did not
4		attend that meeting.
5	Q.	So she certainly couldn't have gone home and
6		started questioning her daughter because she
7		didn't even know what happened in that
8		meeting?
9		MR. WILLIAMS: I'm going to object.
10		It calls for speculation, number one. Number
11		two, I think we were precluded into going
12		into the child A J and her mother, who's
13		outside the parameters of this hearing, which
14		we could have established. So I think they
15		have to play by the same ground rules as we
16		are.
17		THE COURT: You can rephrase the
18		question.
19	[By	Ms. Rooney:]
20	Q.	The question simply is this, Dr. Bruck. Did
21		JERRY BRANCE's mother attend the parents'
22		meeting at the police station?
23	A.	No, she did not.
24	Q.	Could she have possibly known what was said

10/97D

~ . 4

 \bigcirc

-	1	2-95 at that meeting from being there herself?
2	2 A.	Say that could she have known what
19	3	happened at the meeting?
4	ų Q.	Yes?
5	5 A.	She could have, yes.
6	Q.	Because she was there?
7	A.	No. If she no. Okay. She wasn't at the
8		meeting.
9	Q.	You weren't at the meeting either?
10	A.	No.
11	Q.	Now, J. Ogganing's mother attended the
12		meeting?
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	And you're aware that she testified that
15		following that meeting she did not go home
16		and question her daughter?
17		THE COURT: Is this her trial
18		testimony?
19		MS. ROONEY: Again, her trial
20		testimony, Carrow of Carrow.
21	A.	The trial testimony. Immediately following
22		the meeting she did not question her
23		daughter?
24	Q.	That's correct.

10/6701

1 OHM 1 451 H 1 1 OHM A 😧 FERICAU • 1 400-631-6939

1	A.	2-96 Well, maybe immediately following, I don't
2		know.
3	Q.	You don't know
4	A.	I guess not. I don't know of when she started
5		to question her, but it wasn't maybe not
6		immediately following.
7	Q.	Well, it certainly wasn't as you testified
8		that the atmosphere was created that all
9		these parents went rushing home and grabbed
10		theirs kids and started saying, "What
11		happened at the school? What happened to you?
12		I know you were abused." Isn't that what was
13		your testimony yesterday?
14	A.	Well, we know that by October 3rd, when there
15		was the first police interview, that both
16		parents had already questioned J
17		some time between the police interview and
18		October 3rd, she had been questioned by her
19		parents. I don't know exactly what the time
20		line was.
21	Q.	And you don't know how that was done, do you?
22	Α.	Uh, we know I know that the mother
23		questioned her, and we have a note in the
24		file that the father was more confrontative.

FORM LASER BUILD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800 JU1-6989

10/97D

	1 Q.	But you don't know what that we
	2	But you don't know what that means, do you?
	3 A.	You certainly weren't there?
		No, I don't know what it means. I know it
	4	wasn't one question.
5	5 Q.	And in fact, do you know that Carry Oggener
e	;	said that she was impressed with the care
7	,	that her daughter received at the day care
8	A.	Yes, I know that.
9	Q.	following the meeting?
10	A.	Mm-hmm.
11	Q.	And in fact, she didn't learn what the
12		specific allegations were during that police
13		meeting because no one said what the specific
14		allegations were?
15	Α.	My understanding was that at the police
16		meeting they had been told to question their
17		children about a clown, magic room, and a
18		secret room, and that sexual abuse had
19		occurred.
20	Q.	Did anyone say what kind of sexual abuse at
21		the meeting?
22	A.	I don't know.
23	Q.	In fact, they were quite careful not to say
24	, I	what type of sexual abuse occurred, is that
l		is that

10/97D

à

,

FORM LASE OND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1- -631-6989

		2 - 9 8
1		correct?
2	A.	I don't know. I
3	Q.	And in fact, C
4		trial that what she was told at the meeting
5		is, "Don't say anything good about the
6		Amiraults, but don't say anything bad
7		either," do you recall that testimony?
8	Α.	No, I don't.
9	Q.	You only remember the part about saying,
10		"Don't say anything good about the
11		Amiraults," correct?
12	Α.	Yes.
13	Q.	You forget the part about Control of the
14		testifying at trial, "Don't say anything bad
15		about the Amiraults," is that correct, ma'am?
16	A.	Well, in the notes that I have, what I have
17		is, "God forbid you say anything good about
18		the Amiraults or your children will never
19		tell you anything."
20	Q.	And, in fact, those are your notes, is that
21		correct?
22	Α.	Yes.
23	Q.	And those are notes that you made after
24		reviewing the record in this case?
1		

FORM LASER L. VID A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

10/97D

		2 - 9 9
1	A.	Yes.
2	Q.	And those notes are to help you testify here
3		in court today?
4	A.	Uhm, no. Well, I took these notes also as I
5		was writing the affidavit.
6	Q.	Well, certainly in preparation for both your
7		affidavit and your testimony
8	A.	Yes.
9	Q.	here in court?
10	A.	Mm-hmm.
11	Q.	So you pulled from the record those items
12		which would be helpful to your testimony,
13		correct?
14	A.	Yes.
15	Q.	You did not pull from the record the
16		statement that Control of said that the
17		police said, "Don't say anything bad about
18		the Amirault's," because that would not be
19		essentially very helpful to your testimony
20		here today, would it?
21	A.	Well, to be truthful, I never saw that
22		statement.
23	Q.	Now, Barrier I mom attended the meeting
24		at the police station?

FORM LASER BUILD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800-031-9989

10/97D

1	A.	2-100 Yes.
2	Q.	And she also testified that she did not go
3		home immediately and start questioning her
4		son?
5		THE COURT: This is her testimony at
6		trial?
7		MS. ROONEY: Again, her testimony at
8		trial.
9	A.	Okay.
10	Q.	You just have to answer for the reporter.
11	A.	Okay. Well, I don't remember what she
12		testified, but if that's what she testified
13		to.
14	Q.	And in fact, that B rank L ine s mother said
15		that she couldn't believe that the
16		allegations were true?
17	A.	Okay. I don't I don't have memory of this.
18	Q.	In fact, that Barrier Lands s mother was
19		telling co-workers that nothing happened to
20		her son following that meeting at the police
21		station?
22		THE COURT: Are you aware that that's
23		what she testified at the trial? The answer?
24	Α.	I don't know that.
1		

FORM LASER BK 🔺 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800- -6989

Invario

 \bigcirc

		2-101
	1 Q.	Now, Destrict, who's Manager Tests
•	2	mother, she also attended this meeting at the
	3	police station?
4	4 A.	Yes.
Ę	5 Q.	She left early though, didn't she?
e	5 A.	I don't know.
7	'Q.	And do you know that she said at the trial,
8		again, when she testified, that she didn't
9		learn what the factual allegations were at
10		that meeting?
11	A.	No, I didn't know that.
12	Q.	And did you know that she stated that after
13		that meeting she went home but she didn't
14		talk to her child either?
15	A.	No, I don't know that.
16	Q.	Dr. Bruck, you told us yesterday during your
17		testimony that you talked a little bit
18		about the Mousetrap Studies?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	And specifically you spoke about one child, I
21		believe you spoke about it just recently
22		again about this little boy named Billy who
23		was subsequently interviewed
24	A.	Yes.

2

FRANDS AL STRAD

· . ./

	1 Q.	• by channel 5? *
	2	And you indicated that when B
	3	to by John Stossel, he insisted that his
	4	finger had in fact gotten stuck in that
Ľ	5	mousetrap, is that correct?
e	5 A.	Right. Mm-hmm.
7	Q.	You didn't mention yesterday that subsequent
8	3	to that ABC interview, B rand was interviewed
9		again, and when asked the question, "Did you
10		ever get your finger caught in a mousetrap
11		and have to go to the hospital to get it
12		off?" He said, "No?"
13	Α.	When was that interview? Ten months later?
14		Twelve months later?
15	Q.	It's described in the following article, "Are
16		False Memories Permanent?"
17	A.	Right.
18	Q.	:An Investigation of The Long-Term Effects
19		of Source Misattributions,"
20	Α.	Right.
21	Q.	published by Stephen Ceci?
22	A.	Right. And do you know when he was asked that
23		question?
24	Q.	It's not specifically indicated in the

UNU A CD PENGAD . 1. -631-6989

2-103 1 paragraph I'm looking at, but the question 2 is, did you tell us yesterday that this 3 child, after being interviewed by John 4 Stossel --5 He wasn't asked that question. He was asked Α. 6 that question a year or so after being 7 interviewed by John Stossel. And he in fact denied that his finger got 8 Q. 9 caught in the mousetrap? 10 A year later, yes. Α. And he in fact said that it was a story? 11 Q. 12 A year later he said that. Α. 13 You didn't tell us about that yesterday Q. 14 though, did you? 15 I wasn't asked about that yesterday. Α. 16 You certainly didn't volunteer it though, did Q. 17 you? 18 Α. No. Now, you talk in your book, and I'm referring 19 Q. 20 now to your book, the 19 -- I believe it's 21 1995 --But can I just go back to what you just asked 22 Α. 23 me? 24 Ma'am, you've answered my question. Q.

10/97D

)

FORM LASER BUILD A DENGAD • 1-800-031-6989

(

1	L	2-104 THE COURT: You should wait for the
2	2	next question.
3		THE WITNESS: I'm sorry.
4	[Ву	Ms. Rooney:]
5	Q.	The Jeopardy in the Courtroom book?
6	A.	Yes.
7	Q.	And you indicated that you're in the process
8		of revising that book, ma'am?
9	A.	Yes.
10	Q.	You talk in that case about the Country Walk
11		baby-sitting case?
12	A.	Mm-hmm.
13	Q.	And you refer to that case as the case where
14		the codefendant, who is Illiana Furster
15		and correct me if I'm pronouncing their names
16		wrong.
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	She plead guilty?
19	A.	Yes, she did.
20	Q.	She in fact corroborated much of what the
21		children said was true?
22	Α.	Yes.
23	Q.	But you question the veracity of her plea of
24		guilty, is that correct?

FORM LASER I. D.A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80. J1-6989

In al n

1

 \bigcirc

2-105 1 We raised issues about her plea of guilty. Α. 2 And in fact, you also question the physical Q. finding in that case where the child was 3 4 found to have gonorrhea of the throat, you 5 say, maybe the medical test was incorrect? Well, my understanding is that they have 6 Α. 7 subsequently found out that those medical tests are highly unreliable. 8 So maybe the medical tests that showed that 9 Ο. the child of the Furster's had gonorrhea of 10 11 the throat, that was incorrect? 12 Α. Mm-hmm. 13 And maybe her plea of guilty in which she Q. 14 corroborated the testimony of the children, 15 that was not true either? There's a lot of evidence to suggest that 16 Α. 17 this was a coerced plea. 18 That someone forced her to plea guilty? Q. 19 Α. Well, she -- Yes. 20 She was sentenced to ten years, though, Q. 21correct? 22 Α. Yes. Now, those Mousetrap Studies, the first one -23 Q. 24 - you also did a couple of follow-up studies,

10/97D

iD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80. 31-6989

FORM LASER 1

2-106 would you call them, sort of an attempt to 1 2 replicate some of those studies? 3 There were two Mousetrap Studies. Α. And in the second Mousetrap Study, the 4 Q. 5 percentage of -- for the younger children --6 Α. Mm-hmm. 7 -- who assented to the false events, actually Q. 8 went down over the interviews, is that 9 correct? 10 I don't think so. Α. 11 Q. Well, the first --12 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, if I could 13 approach. 14 THE COURT: You may. 15 THE WITNESS: Yes. 16 [By Ms. Rooney:] This is an article entitled, "Repeatedly 17 Q. 18 Thinking About a Non-Event: Source Misattributions Among Preschoolers, " and I'm 19 referring specifically to page 396. 20 (Witness examines document.) 21 Α. 22 I'd ask you to look at the table. Just take a Ο. 23 moment. Mm-hmm. (Witness examines document.) They --24 Α.

BRAD-IFC

2-107 1 it looks -- which one is this one? Oh. Okay. 2 This is the first study that was done. 3 Do you need to look at it any further? Q. No. Okay. But I want to tell you --4 Α. 5 THE COURT: Let's wait for the 6 question. 7 [By Ms. Rooney:] 8 Do you need to look at it any further? Q. 9 No. In this study --Α. 10 Q. Ma'am --11 THE COURT: You've got to wait for the 12 question. 13 THE WITNESS: Okay. 14 You would agree with me that there's a table Q. 15 here that indicates that at the first 16 interview, 44 percent of the younger children 17 assented to the false event? 18 Α. Mm-hmm. 19 THE COURT: Is that --20 Α. Yes. 21 And that by the time they got to the seventh 0. 22 interview, that had gone down to 36 percent of the children, is that correct? Is that 23 what the table shows? 24

(1/6/01

≻631-6989 IUND A C PENGAD 1

ž

2-108 1 Α. That's what it shows. 2 And there was also another sort of follow-up Q. 3 study to these Mousetrap Studies? There's a second one. 4 Α. There's a second study. And in fact, a 5 Q. 6 finding in that case was that 88 percent of 7 children were more likely to assent to 8 fictional neutral events, participant or non-9 participant, and positive events than to 10 negative events, is that correct? 11 Α. That's correct. 12 Dr. Bruck, you testified yesterday that none Q. 13 of the studies that you've conducted have included children who have been sexually 14 15 abused? 16 That's true. Α. 17 And you've had no training or experience with Q. 18 treating a child who's been sexually abused? 19 I spent -- No, I haven't. Α. 20 Have you ever evaluated a child who's been Q. 21 sexually abused? I've sat in on evaluations. 22 Α. 23 Have you ever personally evaluated a child? Q. No, I'm not trained to do that. 24 Α.

10/97D

PENGAD • 1-6 --631-6989 Θ A DNC FORM LASEF.

	1 Q	2-109 Do you have any clinical experience with
	2	sexually abused children?
	3 A	
	4 Q	
1	5	clinician would take into account when
6	5	assessing the validity of a sexual abuse
-	7	allegation?
8	A.	Well, I spent in the fall, at a clinical
9		facility at NYU at Cornell in fact observing
10		clinicians doing this to learn how competent
11		people come to make these kinds of decisions.
12	Q.	
13		a clinician would take into account?
14	Α.	No, I couldn't.
15	Q.	Have you ever applied the results of your
16		research, all of the research that you've
17		been talking about over the past day and a
18		half, to a population of sexually abused
19		children?
20	A.	This No, and it's not meant to be.
21	Q.	The research that you've conducted is not
22		meant to apply to a population of sexually
23		abused children?
24	A.	No.
L		

7

U/B/DI

CONTRACTOR JOINTO A CO PENGAD . 0-031-0389

ل ا

2-110 Dr. Bruck, I'd like to refer you now to your 1 Q. affidavit. Do you have that there in front of 2 3 you? 4 Α. Yes, I do. And I would direct you to page 17 of your 5 Q. 6 affidavit. 7 Α. Okay. Do you have it with you? 8 Q. 9 Α. Yes. Now, on page 17, you indicate that the 10 Q. 11 experiments prior to the 1990s were not 12 designed to study the effects of suggestive interviews on children's abilities to provide 13 14 accurate reports, correct? 15 I did? Α. 16 If I refer you to page 17 --Q. 17 Α. Yes. -- subsection 4, headline A. "Experiments 18 Q. 19 prior to the early 1990s were not designed to study the effects of suggestive interviews on 20 children's ability to provide accurate 21 22 reports?" 23 MR. WILLIAMS: Well, your Honor --I think you've left something out here. 24 Α.

10/8/01

PENGAD • 1-€ 631-6989

Э

V OPL

LOHALLAGER

2-111 1 MR. WILLIAMS: -- she leaves out the 2 clause, "like those in this case." Is that what this says? 3 Q. No. It says that, "Experiments prior to the 4 Α. 5 early 1990s were not designed to study the effects of suggestive interviews -- like 6 7 those in this case -- on children's ability to provide accurate reports." 8 And you go on to say that, "That void left 9 Q. 10 open the question of suggestibility of 11 preschool children?" I go on to say it opened the void of what 12 Α. happens to preschool children, can they be 13 14 suggested, central events that happen to their own bodies that are sometimes sexual in 15 16 nature. 17 Actually, what you said, and again, I'm Q. 18 referring you now to page 18, paragraph 34, "This void left open the question of the 19 suggestibility of preschool children?" 20 (Witness examines document.) 21 Α. The second-to-last line in that paragraph? 22 Q. 23 I'm sorry --Α. 24 THE COURT: I'm sorry. What's the

1

TM LASEN NU A CO PENGAD . 1-8. J31-6989

		2-112
1		question?
2	Q.	What she went on to say is, "This void left
3		open the question of the suggestibility of
4		preschool children."
5		THE COURT: Did you say that in this
6		affidavit?
7		THE WITNESS: Yes, I did.
8	Q.	You're familiar with the misinformation
9		effect?
10	A.	Yes, I am.
11	Q.	And essentially the misinformation effect,
12		the theory is that post-event information can
13		alter a child's memory, or an adult memory,
14		for that matter?
15	A.	Yes.
16	Q.	And that theory was originated, I believe,
17		back in 1908?
18	A.	Well, I think that Elizabeth Loftus was
19		really the first person to bring it to the
20		modern stage.
21	Q.	But the original theory, I believe was
22		described in a book
23	A.	Yes.
24	Q.	<u>On The Witness Stand</u> , back in 1908?

FORM LASER WUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80-631-6989

10/97D

.

 \bigcirc

		2-113
1	A.	By who?
2	Q.	By Munsterberg?
3	A.	Well, that's your reading of it. I I would
4		have to go back to history again to really
5		see where it first began. I don't think it
6		was there. Anyway
7	Q.	It began even earlier perhaps?
8	A.	Maybe. I don't know. I really don't know.
9	Q.	At least in
10	A.	I talked to Elizabeth Loftus about this
11	Q.	Ma'am, there's no question before you.
12		In 1908
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	in any event
15	A.	Mm-hmm.
16	Q.	there is a book entitled, <u>On The Witness</u>
17		Stand
18	A.	Mm-hmm.
19	Q.	and in that book it talks about how
20		leading questions and specific questions can
21		alter an eyewitness report.
22	A.	Okay.
23	Q.	And from 1908 up until 1990, there were
24		certainly studies which evaluated that

FORM LASER 🗆 ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-୫୯.୦31-6989

		2-114
1		misinformation effect?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	And in fact, Elizabeth Loftus conducted a
4		number of them?
5	A.	Absolutely.
6	Q.	But primarily her work focused on adults?
7	A.	Yes, they did.
8	Q.	But her work reviewed the effect of leading
9		questions?
10	A.	Uhm, on adults.
11	Q.	On adults?
12	A.	Yes.
13	Q.	The use of specific or directed questions on
14		adults?
15	A.	I'm not that familiar with all of her work,
16		but she's looked at the form the questions
17		take on adults, yes.
18	Q.	In fact, in 1978, there was a study conducted
19		by Elizabeth Loftus as well as Dale and
20		Rathbun?
21	A.	Yes.
22	Q.	And that study involved four and five-year-
23		old children?
24	A.	That's true.

		2-115
1	Q.	And those children were asked to view some
2		short films and then asked a series of
3		questions about it?
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	And that study was done in 1978?
6	A.	That's true.
7	Q.	And there was also a study done in 1987 by
8		Marie Zaragoza?
9	A.	Zaragoza.
10	Q.	And she replicated that Loftus Study using
11		preschoolers?
12	A.	That's true.
13	Q.	And that was available in 1987?
14	A.	In a book of edited readings by Ceci et. al.,
15		yes.
16	Q.	And there was a study conducted in 1979 by
17		Marin, et. al.?
18	A.	That's true.
19	Q.	And again, he found a significant
20		misinformation effect for both children and
21		adults, is that correct?
22	Α.	Uh, yes.
23	Q.	There was a study done in 1988 by Ochsner,
24		and again, Zaragoza?
		J/ Juragoza?

019701

FORMILASER ... 40 A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80, J31-6989

Û

1	. A.	2-116 Unpublished.
2		
3	~	And that study had children experience a man
4		coming into a room and stealing a purse?
		Yes.
5	Q.	Again, studying the misinformation effect on
6		children?
7	A.	That's true.
8	Q.	There was a study in 1987 done by King and
9		Yuille?
10	A.	Yuille.
11	Q.	Yuille?
12	A.	Mm-hmm.
13	Q.	And that was a series of experiments,
14		designed a study, what was presumed to be a
15		central concern of children, and that was the
16		Staged Bicycle Theft Study?
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	And that, again, was in 1987, is that
19		correct, ma'am?
20	A.	Yes.
21	Q.	And in 1986, is that when Gail Goodman and
22		Reed began doing some of the Simon Says
23		Studies?
24	A.	Yes.
L		

10.9.D

ELECTE DE REV 😧 ELECTOR ELECTRO DE COMB

		2-117
1	Q.	And the Simon Says Studies in 1986 involved
2		three-year-olds, six-year-olds as well as
3		adults?
4	A.	(No verbal response.)
5	Q.	Is that correct?
6	A.	There were three-year-olds in that study,
7		yes.
8	Q.	You also go on to say in your affidavit,
9		again I'm referring you to page 18, at the
10		top of the page in that paragraph that's not
11		a complete paragraph, "Regardless of the
12		measure of suggestibility, a consistent
13		finding was that younger children were more
14		suggestible than older children?"
15	Α.	That's true.
16	Q.	And again, you're referring to prior to 1990
17		studies?
18	A.	Right.
19	Q.	Would you agree with me, though, that prior
20	5 -	to 1990 there was also research that was
21		inconsistent
22	Α.	Yes.
23	Q.	on the issue of children's suggestibility?
24	Α.	We reviewed that in our Psychological
Ĺ		

ł

FORM LASER E D.A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-801 , 1-6989

10/97D

0

		2 110
1	L .	2-118 Bulletin paper.
2	Q.	And it's actually on pages 409 and 410 of
3		your paper. You actually list the studies
4		prior to 1990 that found children are more
5		suggestible?
6	A.	That's true.
7	Q.	And in that list, you list a 1980 study by
8		Cohen and Harnick?
9	Α.	Yes.
10	Q.	You refer again to the King and, is it,
11		Yuille?
12	Α.	Yuille.
13	Q.	Yuille Study of 1987. And a study by Stephen
14		Ceci, et. al. in 1987?
15	A.	Right.
16	Q.	And a study by Goodman and Reed, again, the
17		Simon Says Studies in 1986. And all of those
18		were prior to 1990?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	And all of those were had findings that
21		indicate that children are more suggestible
22		than adults?
23	A.	Yes.
24	Q.	You also go on in that article and list some

, i

2-119 studies that show that children are not more 1 2 suggestible than adults. And you refer to a 3 study by Marin, Holms, Guth and Kovac in 4 1979? 5 Α. Mm-hmm. 6 And a study by Duncan, Whitney and Kunen in Q. 7 1982? 8 Α. That's true. 9 So in fact, the research prior to 1990 was Q. 10 somewhat inconsistent. There were people on both sides of the fence as it were? 11 12 There were a few studies where -- Yes. Α. Yes. 13 You would also agree with me, would you not, Ο. that prior to 1990, on page 18 of your 14 15 affidavit, you state that the studies that were done about "inaccurate reports about 16 17 neutral events that had little personal 18 salience?" 19 Α. Yes. 20 And you go on to say that, "It was not known Q. if" there were "similar inaccurate reports 21 22 ... about more central events?" 23 Α. Yes. But in fact, prior to 1990, there are at 24 Q.

10/97D

FUTIN LASETI ULITU A 😰 PENGAD • 1-800- 631-6989

:	1	2-120 least two studies on children's memories for
	2	traumatic event?
	3 A.	What were they?
4	4 Q.	Are you familiar with the study on the sniper
5	5	attack? I believe you referred to it in, I
6	i.	believe it was in your affidavit
7	A.	Yes.
8	Q.	in 1989 by Pynoos and Nader?
. 9	A.	That's not a suggestibility study.
10	Q.	It was an actual event
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	that happened, correct?
13	A.	Mm-hmm.
14	Q.	A sniper actually shot at the schoolyard. And
15		the children were interviewed. These were
16		children who actually had experienced the
17		event?
18	A.	Right.
19	Q.	And that study back in 1989 found that some
20		of the children
21	A.	1989?
22	Q.	who weren't even there that day
23	A.	Right.
24	Q.	said they were?
l		

Inarn

1. O'THAT KARATAL AND A LEWISAD • 1-80 31-6989

 \bigcirc

-		2-121
1	A.	Right.
2	Q.	And it also found that the children who were
3		directly involved in the incident were quite
4		accurate in their recall of central
5		information about the incident although not
6		necessarily about peripheral details?
7	A.	Right.
8	Q.	And that, again, was in 1989?
9	A.	Okay.
10	Q.	And the other study I'm referring to, again,
11		is an actual incident, "The Chowchilla Bus
12		Incident?"
13	A.	Right.
14	Q.	And that was done by Lenore Terr?
15	Α.	Mm-hmm.
16	Q.	In 1988?
17	A.	Mm-hmm.
18	Q.	And that was a study conducted of some
19		children who were actually, I believe, buried
20		alive on a school bus?
21	Α.	Right.
22	Q.	And that study found that the children's
23		memory for trauma, at least the gist of the
24		memory, was accurate?

FORM LASER BOND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-400-631-6989

Ċ

1	. A.	2-122 Yes.
2	Q.	Now, you go on to state in your affidavit
3		I'm referring you now to page 19, subheading
4		B, that the "Recent Experiments Are Designed
5		to Study the Effects of Suggestive Interviews
6		Like Those in This Case On Children's
7		Ability to Provide Accurate Reports," is that
8		correct, ma'am?
9	A.	Mm-hmm. Yes.
10	Q.	And then you begin to go through in the
11		following pages all of the different things
12		that you've testified to about interviewer
13		bias and so on?
14	A.	Okay.
15	Q.	Now, with respect to the interviewer bias
16		that we've talked about a great deal, you've
17		talked about that Janitor Study, that I
18		believe was in 1997?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	You would agree with me, would you not, that
21		that study had nothing to do with the
22		physical integrity of the child?
23	Α.	In terms of the child being touched?
24	Q.	Correct.

.

FORM LASER LUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8(L v31-6989

		2-123
1	A.	No. I agree with you.
2	Q.	It was only an observation by the child of
3		the janitor coming into the room and doing a
4		variety of things?
5	Α.	Yes.
б	Q.	Now, you have stated that the interviewer
7		bias is a very crucial part of an interview?
8	A.	No. What I stated is that the neutrality
9		in terms the neutrality of an interviewer
10		is a very crucial part of an interview or a
11		good interview, yes.
12	Q.	So, in fact, interviewer bias plays quite
13		heavily into whether or not a child's report
14		is accurate, do you agree with that?
15	A.	Yes.
16	Q.	Now, you've indicated that in order to
17		prepare your affidavit as well as to prepare
18		for your testimony here today, you reviewed
19		the transcripts of the testimony of several
20		of the experts that testified at the 1987
21		trial?
22	Α.	I did.
23	Q.	Now, I'm referring specifically to Dr.
24		Schuman, who testified at a pretrial motion

Ę,

 \bigcirc

	1	2-124 hearing on March 20th of 1986?
:	2 A.	Mm-hmm.
	3 Q.	Now, Dr. Schuman, on page 16 of his
4	1	testimony, talked about interviewer bias, did
5	5	he not?
e	5 A.	Can I see the record?
. 7	Q.	Certainly.
8		THE COURT: And it's an exhibit?
9		MS. ROONEY: I'm sorry?
10		THE COURT: It's an exhibit also?
11		MS. ROONEY: Yes, it is.
12		THE COURT: What exhibit number?
13		MS. SULLIVAN: 55.
14		THE COURT: 55. Okay.
15	A.	(Witness examines document.)
16		Okay. Yes. Well, I think he described the
17		concept
18	Q.	Ma'am Do you need to look at it again?
19	A.	Well
20	Q.	Perhaps I'll give you the exhibit, that will
21		be helpful.
22		THE COURT: Thank you.
23	A.	Yes. What page are we on?
24	Q.	Page 16.
l	• <u> </u>	

	1 A	Witness examines d
		(areas examines document.)
	2	I don't really see where the term interview
	3	bias is used to begin with.
4	4 Q	. Are you on page 16, ma'am?
ŗ	5 A	Yeah.
e	5 Q.	He does not use the term interviewer bias.
7	' A.	
8	Q.	What he says is and I'm again reading from
9		page 16 "Well, to boil it down, the child
10		winds up conforming to the inadvertent
11		expectations of what the child is supposed to
12		say. What that does in clinical terms is to
13		impair the voluntariness of the child's
14		reports and thereby impacting adversely on
15		the child's voluntary component of
16		competency, " is that correct?
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	He's referring there, is he not, to the
19		expectations of an interviewer, of what the
20		interviewer expects the child to say, and
21		then says that the child conformed to those
22		expectations?
23	A.	I think he's trying to say that, yes.
24	Q.	And I refer you, again, to the testimony of

.

10.07 U

 \hat{W} (19.1) (1) (31.1)

 \bigcirc

:	L	2-126 Dr. Erickson, which is trial testimony
2	2	it's Exhibit 56, the last volume on the
(*)	3	exhibit list, 12.
4		
5		For the record, I'm handing Dr.
6		Bruck, it's Exhibit 56, subsection 12, which
		is Dr. Erickson's testimony, and I believe
7		subsection 11, which is Dr. Skidmore's
8		testimony.
9	A.	Okay.
10		THE COURT: And you're asking about?
11	[Ву	Ms. Rooney:]
12	Q.	I'm referring to Dr. Erickson's testimony, on
13		page 9-31.
14	A.	What
15	Q.	Are you on that page?
16	A.	Well, I can't read the page. Where does it
17		begin? "Well, I can think of a couple of
18		instances"
19		THE COURT: Let's just wait for the
20		question.
21	Q.	I believe you're on the right page.
22	A.	Okay.
23	Q.	He goes on in this point to talk about
24		that the interviewer failed to distinguish

	1	2-127 between a caretaking touch and a sexual
	2	touch?
	3 A.	Am I in the right interview here.
	4	THE COURT: Do you have a line number,
ļ	5	too? Or there is no line number.
e	5 A.	
- 7	,	I'm on page 31.
8	Q.,	9-31.
9	A.	Okay. Give me a line
10	Q.	Top of the page between lines 4 and 9.
11	A.	(Witness examines document.)
12	Q.	He states, "But I would also point out that
13		there was not an effort made to specify that
14		the touch, for instance, that was inquired
15		about, was different than touch in
16		caretaking."
17	A.	Okay.
18	Q.	So he's talking about, again, in this portion
19		of his testimony, that the interviewer,
20		namely Susan Kelley, made no effort to
21		distinguish what would be considered normal
22		caretaking touch, such as you testified to,
23		about changing the pants if the child had an
24		accident, and a sexual touch?
		- DEAUAL COUCH?

· ..

FORM LASEN. JOND A 😨 PENGAD • 14UV631-6989

:	L A.	2-128 Right.
2	2 Q.	Again, another example of interviewer bias?
3	A.	Yes.
4	Q.	And I refer you again in Dr. Erickson's
5		testimony to page 9-137.
6	A.	Okay.
7	Q.	Lines 7 through 11.
8	A.	(Witness examines document.)
9	Q.	He's talking about the normal response or
10		reaction of a typical parent learning that
11		their child may have been abused would be to
12		hope that it did not happen to their child?
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	So that in effect is talking about sort of
15		the other side of interviewer bias, that a
16		parent might not want to believe that sexual
17		abuse had occurred and might have different
18		expectations of a child?
19		THE COURT: Is your answer "yes?"
20	A.	This is what the question is, yes.
21	Q.	Now, you would agree you talked about,
22		yesterday, that B rand L ord disclosed to his
23		mother, do you remember saying that
24		yesterday?

10/8/01

FUHM LASEF JND A 😧 PENGAD • 14 631-6989

		2 - 1 2 9
	L A.	I think he disclosed to his mother some time
2	2	in January after therapy.
3	9 Q.	He actually disclosed to Manager Manager
4		which was his mother's boyfriend.
5	A.	Oh.
6	Q.	Do you recall that?
7	A.	I didn't know that he disclosed to M
8		Manager, but I have to look back at my
9		notes.
10	Q.	And Manager Take, you've testified that she
11		actually talked about the allegations to her
12		mother's fiance, who was a police officer, a
13		Steven DiPietro?
14	A.	Right.
15	Q.	And that Jack of the she first made
16		the allegations about sexual abuse, she did
17		that to her mother in the car ride on the way
18		home?
19	A.	I didn't testify to that.
20	Q.	Do you recall that there was testimony that
21		after the Susan Kelley interview
22	A.	Oh, JEBER BEREIN
23	Q.	I'm sorry. Januar Barana
24	Α.	J B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B B

ייי איה

1.0484122451815 - 20 🕑 1.E1463AD • 1.6004 - 6869

	1 Q	Jerry Berline no disclorumina i
	2	. Jack Bernet, no disclosures during the interview?
	3 A	
	4 Q	
	5	albeitsules were made to her mom in the
	_	car ride on the way home?
	6 A.	Yes.
•	7 Q.	And that J 0 0 made disclosures to
8	3	her mother as well?
9) A.	That's right.
10	Q.	Now, you would agree with me that all of
11		those parents, including the boyfriend,
12		slash, fiance of these mother's, they don't
13		want to hear that the child's been sexually
14		abused?
15	A.	I can't tell you what they wanted to hear.
16	Q.	So it's your testimony that M
17		mother wanted to hear that her child had been
18		sexually abused by the defendant?
19		MR. WILLIAMS: I object. She just
20		said she doesn't know.
21		THE COURT: You may answer that
22		question. Overruled.
23	A.	What I understand from the record was
24	Q.	
		Ma'am, the question is, did Manager Turks

2-131 1 mother want to hear that her child had been 2 sexually abused? 3 THE COURT: And let's let her answer 4 the question. 5 MS. ROONEY: I believe it can be answered with a yes or no. 6 7 THE COURT: Well, I'll disagree. You may answer the question. 8 What I understand from the record was the 9 Α. 10 parents were told that sexual abuse had occurred in the day care. They were told to 11 question their child. They were told not to 12 13 accept no as an answer; that no did not mean 14 And that -- and so, my impression is no. that the parents didn't want their children 15 to be sexually abused, but when they heard 16 "no," it wasn't a relief to them; that they 17 were waiting to hear that their children were 18 19 sexually abused. 20 It's not that they wanted them to be, 21 but the expected answer that they were 22 waiting for was that something had happened bad at the day care and they were ready to 23 24 hear it.

0/970

- UHM LASER BC. A 🔁 PENGAD • 1-800-

-6963

2 - 132So the expectation of these parents was that 1 Q. 2 their children had been sexually abused and it was their goal, their mission, to question 3 4 their child until they said, "Yes, I was 5 sexually abused too?" I can't tell you if that was in the head of 6 Α. 7 the parents. But certainly that's what the police told parents, to question their 8 children and not to take no for an answer. 9 10 I'm asking you now about the interviewer bias Q. 11 as it pertains to those parents --12 Α. Right. -- when the children made their first 13 Q. 14 allegations to the parents, was it the 15 expectation of those parents and the desire of those parents to hear allegations of 16 17 sexual abuse by their child? 18 I can't tell you about what their desire was. Α. Was it their expectation? 19 Q. Their expectation was that there had been 20 Α. sexual abuse and that their children had been 21 in the day care, and their children had 22 previously said no, it hadn't happened, which 23 could be a sign that yes, it did happen. 24

10/97D

FORM LASER B. J.A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800-

1-6989

2 - 133So the fact that one of these mothers is 1 Q. 2 telling coworkers that my son wasn't abused, 3 and is telling the pediatrician, "I don't 4 think my child was abused, " that has no 5 bearing on their expectation; that doesn't 6 tell you anything about whether or not they 7 want to hear allegations of sexual abuse from 8 their child? 9 When did Mrs. Letter tell her coworkers that? Α. 10 After the parents' meeting at the police Q. 11 station? 12 Billy Leary did not make allegations until Α. 13 the end of January. 14 That's correct. So all of a sudden in Q. 15 January she starts thinking my child was abused, but back in September, after she goes 16 17 to the parents' meeting, she's not thinking 18 her child was abused? 19 My understanding is that Mrs. Leary said, "I Α. 20 can't handle it if my child tells me I'm abused, so I'm going to send him to a 21 22 therapist." Because she didn't want to believe that her 23 Ο. child had been abused? 24

PENGAD . 1-80. _31-6989 Θ A U. FORM LASER .

10/97D

	1 A.	2-134 I don't know if she didn't want to believe it
	2	or didn't want to hear it, but she said, "I
	3	don't want to learn ten to fifteen years down
	4	the line, " and she put her child into
!	5	therapy, and then we also have this statement
6	5	by the therapist that said, "At the mother's
7	7	insistence, he's come to talk to me about
8	3	this." I mean, I can't tell you what's in
9		the parents' heads.
10	Q.	Can you tell us what's in the minds of the
11		police officers?
12	A.	No, I can't.
13	Q.	Can you tell us what was in the mind of Susan
14		Kelley?
15	A.	I can tell you what Susan Kelley about
16		Susan Kelley's words, which are the only
17	Q.	Can you tell us about what was in Susan
18		Kelley's mind?
19	A.	No.
20	Q.	And you can't tell us what was in the mind of
21		the police officers?
22	Α.	No, I can't.
23	Q.	There's also a 1995 study conducted by Gail
24		Goodman, et. al and that is a
		Goodman, et. al., and that study included

ر

2-135 1 false suggestions of abuse when mothers interview their children. Are you aware of 2 3 that study? 4 Α. I know that study. 5 And in fact, she found that children were Q. more resistant to suggestions when questioned 6 7 by their mothers versus being questioned by 8 strangers? 9 Α. On very -- on a very small number of --10 Q. So you disagree with her findings? 11 I don't disagree with her findings, but if Α. 12 you read it carefully, she says on most measures mothers and non-mothers did the 13 14 same. There are some very small differences 15in that study, and I agree that when the 16 mothers question their children that 17 sometimes the children are more accurate. 18 And sometimes they're not? Q. Sometimes they're as accurate, as accurate as 19 Α. 20 the non-mothers. You also talked about, during your testimony, 21 Q. about the danger of specific and leading 22 23 questions of children? 24 Α. Yes.

10/97D

1-6989

PENGAD • 1-800

Θ

۲

FOUND LASER B

2-136 And I refer you now to the testimony of Dr. 1 Q. 2 Skidmore on page 10-79. 3 THE COURT: This is trial testimony? 4 MS. ROONEY: Again, this is all trial 5 testimony. 6 THE COURT: From exhibit 56, 7 subsection 11? 8 MS. ROONEY: That's correct. 9 Α. Okay. Lines 9 through 14. Dr. Skidmore testified 10 Q. that, "The questions themselves need to be 11 12 nonleading, that is, to be asked in as 13 neutral a way as possible, and that goes for 14 adults, too, by the way, but it is more 15 important when we are dealing with kids, 16 because they are much more vulnerable to 17 suggestibility." 18 Α. Yes. 19 If you look on the next page, 10-80, Dr. Q. 20 Skidmore goes on to talk about, "Both the 21 actual language and the way the words are put 22 together, and the tone of voice that is used, the setting, the environment, the effect or 23 objectivity of the interviewer or examiner, 24

ו היאי ה

11-6989

C PENGAD - 1-80

۲ A

1		2-137
		all of that goes into neutrality." She
2		testified to that before the jury?
3	A.	Yes.
4	Q.	Now, referring you to page 10-87 of Dr.
5		Skidmore's testimony where she states that
6		the question is asked, "Dr. Skidmore, would
7		you characterize the interviewer that you saw
8		in J unior B unior s case as a neutral
9		interviewer?"
10		Answer: "Very few sentences,
11		questions, or phrases across the interview
12		were neutral."
13		Is that her testimony?
14	A.	Mm-hmm. Yes.
15	Q.	I refer you now to Dr. Erickson's testimony
16		before the jury, which is Exhibit 56,
17		subsection 12. And I'd ask you to turn to
18		page 9-30, and again, I understand that the
19		numbers are a bit cut off at the top.
20	A.	Okay. This is the one with the cut-off ones?
21	Q.	Yes.
22	Α.	Okay. What's the number you want me to look
23		at?
24	Q.	It's page 9-30, and I'm referring you

FORMLASER L (D A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80L _J1-6989

10/97D

<u>ن</u>

2-138 1 specifically to lines 7 through 11. 2 (Witness examines document.) Α. 3 Okay. 4 And he testifies, "Another very significant Q. influence is the questioning style of the 5 investigator, and also the issue of how the 6 7 child perceives the importance of the 8 interview and the investigator." 9 That was his testimony before the jury? 10 Α. Yes. 11 And referring you in that same exhibit to Q. page 9-172, the question was, "Do you have an 12 13 opinion regarding the interviewing techniques 14 that were used during the course of those 15 videotaped interviews?" 16 Answer: "There were many parts or many sequences that were extremely suggestive 17 and leading and selective in their response 18 19 to the child's answers." 20 That was his testimony? 21 Α. Yes. Now, you would agree with me, would you not, 22 Ο. Dr. Bruck, that in order to get a disclosure 23 from a child, one might have to in fact use 24

:	1	some direct questioning?
2	2 A.	Yes, I agree with that.
	3 Q.	And in fact, the question, "Was there anybody
4	Ł	you didn't like at school, or was there any
5	5	of the teachers that you didn't like at day
6		care," would you agree that's an open-ended
7		question?
8	A.	I think that's a question one could use in
9		conjunction with the question, "Tell me about
10		the people you like."
11	Q.	And in fact, if you just asked a child, "Tell
12		me about school, " you would agree that it
13		would be an incredibly short conversation?
14	A.	In some cases it could be a very short
15		conversation; in some cases you might get a
16		lot of information. Or just try it.
17	Q.	But you would agree I'm sorry?
18	A.	You should try it.
19	Q.	You should try asking, "Tell me about school
20		today?"
21	A.	You should always try, starting with the
22		open-ended questions, and see how much
23		information you get.
24	Q.	And if you don't, then you should move on to

2

FORM LASER BOND A (PENGAD • 1-600-631-6989

1		2 - 1 4 0
1		some more specific, more directed questions?
2	A.	Slowly, yes.
3	Q.	Now, you also talked about, in your testimony
4		and in your affidavit, the danger of repeated
5		interviews?
6	A.	Yes.
7	Q.	And I refer you now to Dr
8	A.	To repeated suggestive interviews.
9	Q.	And I refer you to Dr. Schuman's testimony at
10		the pretrial hearing, referring you to page
11		19, lines 12 through 16, where he testifies,
12		"The use of repetitive interviews or multiple
13		interviewers of a child would have a definite
14		impact on the child's capacity to report with
15		neutrality."
16	Α.	I see that, yes.
17	Q.	Would you agree with me that there was a
18		study done in 1991 by Ornstein and Brainerd,
19		which had a finding state that it's well-
20		established that repeated interviewing can
21		help children maintain accurate memory by
22	I	keeping the information from being forgotten?
23	Α.	That's incorrect. They didn't do a study.
24		They wrote a paper, and in that paper they

U10/01

FORM LASER BOND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

. .

		2 - 1 4 1
1	-	reviewed literature on what was known about
2	2	children's reporting when they're asked over
3		a non-suggestive interviews about events.
4	Q.	And their finding that it was well-
5		established that repeated interviewing helped
6		children maintain accurate memory by keeping
7		the information from being forgotten?
8	A.	Yes. At that point, I think that finding is
9		now disputed, but in 1991, that's the
10		finding, but for non-suggestive interviews,
11		okay.
12		THE COURT: Let me just clarify. This
13		is a 1991?
14		MS. ROONEY: That's correct.
15	[Ву	Ms. Rooney:]
16	Q.	Now, you also talked about the emotional tone
17		of the interview and how that factors into a
18		child's report?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	And that's on page 36 of your affidavit.
21	A.	(Witness examines document.)
22	Q.	Dr. Schuman testified at the pretrial hearing
23		about: "One additional factor comes to mind,
24		and that is, the use, the application of

۰. د.....

•

2 - 142interviews in a highly emotionally-charged 1 atmosphere, either an atmosphere of pressure 2 3 or in the presence of people who are known to the child to have a powerful and emotional 4 investment in the process, people who are 5 either scared or angry, or very anxious, or 6 7 who evince through the child those kinds of emotions that would inevitably have some kind 8 9 of skewing impact on the child." 10 Is he talking there about the 11 emotional tone of the interview? 12 The atmosphere of the interview, yes. Α. 13 THE COURT: This is at the pretrial hearing, at what page? 14 15 MS. ROONEY: I'm sorry. On page 20 of 16 the pretrial hearing. 17 And I refer you to Dr. Skidmore's trial Q. 18 testimony --19 THE COURT: Let me, so that I 20 understand, Dr. Schuman did not, or was not 21 allowed to testify at the trial? 22 MS. ROONEY: He did not testify at the trial. Dr. Skidmore and Dr. Erickson 23 testified at the trial. 24

PENGAD • 1-600-1-6989 FORM LASER BU. J A

10/97D

2 - 1431 [By Ms. Rooney:] 2 And Dr. Skidmore testified on page 10-80, Q. 3 that "Both the actual language and the way 4 the words are put together, and the tone of voice that is used, the setting, the 5 6 environment, the effect or objectivity of the interviewer or examiner, all of that goes 7 8 into neutrality." 9 And Dr. Erickson, on page 9-30 --10 THE COURT: That was a "yes?" 11 Yes. I'm sorry. Yes. Α. 12 THE COURT: And then, what was the 13 last? Dr. Erickson, on page 9-30, talked again 14 Q. 15 about "the questioning style of the 16 investigator, and also the issue of how the child perceives the importance of the 17 interview and the investigator." 18 19 Would you agree that that goes to the emotional tone of the interview? And that's 20 21 on page 9-30, line 7 through 11. 22 (Witness examines document.) Α. Uhm, that goes to emotional tone. It goes to 23 what we call interviewer status also, yes. 24

<

10/9/10

110 A 🚯 FENGAD+1-8 331-6989

1 OPINI AGUN

1	. Q.	And that is adultated to $2-144$
2	~	And that's adults of high status, I believe
3		you referred to that as well?
		Adults of high status or credible
4		interviewers, yes.
5	Q.	You also talk about, in your affidavit, the
6		use of rewards and punishments?
7	A.	Mm-hmm. Yes.
8	Q.	And that's on page 39 of your affidavit?
9	A.	Yes.
10	Q.	And Dr. Schuman testified at the pretrial
11		hearing, a question was asked of him, "Tell
12		me if you tell me what we want to know
13		we'll get you a cookie, or we'll give you a
14		coloring book, or we'll let you go out and
15		play, that kind of thing, the operating of a
16		reward or a present." And his answer was, "I
17		really find that hard to believe. That's not
18		standard interviewing procedure?"
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	
21	× ·	And he went on to say that he finds that hard
		to believe. That it's inappropriate, it
22		shouldn't be used?
23	Α.	Yes.
24		MR. WILLIAMS: Your Honor, I don't
L	×	

 $\langle S \rangle$

2 - 145mean to interrupt again. I'm just going to 1 2 object on relevance grounds to Dr. Schuman. After all, Judge -- Justice Dolan ruled that 3 he was not allowed to testify. So whatever he 4 5 said, I don't see how it's relevant to what we have to do here. He wasn't allowed to 6 7 testify in front of the jury, precisely for the reasons we're suggesting. 8 9 THE COURT: I assume part of your theory with this question about Dr. Schuman 10 11 is, this is not newly discovered evidence? 12 MS. ROONEY: That's correct. 13 THE COURT: What's the relevance of his testimony at the pretrial hearing where 14 15 the finding was that it was not admissible at trial to the argument of: this is newly 16 17 discovered evidence? 18 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, that was not 19 the finding at the pretrial hearing. That pretrial hearing was actually a Motion to 20 Dismiss or a Motion to Suppress the 21 Children's Testimony. 22 23 THE COURT: I see. Okay. 24 MS. ROONEY: So it was not, with

FORM LASER E. , D A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800 _J1-6989

10/97D

2-146 1 respect -- it was not really a proffer of 2 expert testimony. It was merely their 3 pretrial Motion to Dismiss the indictments or 4 to suppress the children's statement. 5 THE COURT: So your position, in part 6 is, it is not newly discovered evidence --7 MS. ROONEY: That's correct. 8 THE COURT: -- and we don't know why 9 they didn't call Dr. Schuman at the trial, but that was the defendants' decision? 10 11 MS. ROONEY: Right. And they did in fact call Dr. Erickson and Dr. Skidmore, who 12 testified, as I'm going through, in substance 13 14 to what Dr. Schuman testified at the 15 pretrial. 16 THE COURT: Okay. 17 MR. WILLIAMS: But, your Honor, Justice Dolan rejected the testimony on Frye 18 grounds based upon the standards prevailing 19 20 at that time. 21 THE COURT: Okay. I'll reconsider the 22 ruling if you can point to the hearing, a little bit later, where she makes that 23 ruling. But for now, I'm going to overrule 24

01001

C PENGAD 1-F 631-6989

		2 - 1 4 7
	1	the objection.
	2	MR. WILLIAMS: Fair enough.
-	3 [Ву	/ Ms. Rooney:]
4	4 Q.	Dr. Bruck, you go on to talk about I
5	5	believe we just spoke about this adults of
6	;	high status and how that may have an effect
7		on a child?
8	A.	Yes.
9	Q.	I believe we just reviewed Dr. Schuman's
10		testimony, on page 19, he was talking about
11		adults of high status, and he also said,
12		"interviewing in costume could be a coercive
13		element." Included in that, a costume as a
14		police officer's uniform?
15	A.	Yes.
16	Q.	And Dr. Skidmore, on page 10-87, of her trial
17		testimony on June 10th, 1987
18		THE COURT: Dr. Skidmore?
19		MS. ROONEY: I'm sorry. Dr. Skidmore,
20		page 10-87, line 11 through 16.
21	Q.	"Another major source of error in child
22		statements is the perceived authority, the
23		child's perception. What the kid believes the
24		authority of the interviewer to be.
l		

: .

2 . .

٠...

2-148 1 Therefore, it is crucial to keep the authority loading as low as possible, just by 2 the nature of the fact that I'm an adult, 3 4 you're an adult and you have a young child; 5 that's a whole lot of authority. If we have two adults or more, it's really loading the 6 7 deck." 8 "If the interview is conducted in an 9 authoritative place like a principal's office 10 or a police department; it adds to that." 11 That was her trial testimony? 12 Α. Yes. 13 THE COURT: One moment. How are you 14 doing with the speed. 15 [Court reporter indicates.] 16 THE COURT: Not great. Let's --17 MS. ROONEY: I will, your Honor. [By Ms. Rooney:] 18 19 You also talked a great deal, Dr. Bruck, Q. 20 about the distinction between fact and 21 fantasy and the use of imaging with the 22 child, and I believe you were talking about 23 those puppets, the Bert and Ernie Puppets. 24 I refer you to Dr. Skidmore's

10/97D

PENGAD • 1-8-00-631-6989 Θ FORM LASE, JOND A

2-149 testimony, and ask you to look at page 10-93. 1 2 (Witness examines document.) Α. 3 Are you there, ma'am? Q. 4 Α. Yes. At the bottom of the page, Dr. Skidmore 5 Q. 6 testified that, "It's import to evaluate for 7 each child, the child's degree of 8 distinguishing fact from fantasy. Every child mixes up fact and fantasy a lot." 9 10 Is that her testimony? 11 Α. Yes, it is. 12 Then she goes on on page 10-106, and states Q. 13 that -- Question: "Doctor, if you could 14 comment on the learning process that a child 15 may go through during the course of the 16 interview with respect to the issue of fact 17 and fantasy, or the degree of the child's 18 ability to distinguish between fact and 19 fantasy?" 20 Answer: "Okay. Up until about the age of six, a child does not distinguish fact 21 and fantasy, or dream and fact." 22 23 That was her testimony? Yes. Yes, it was. 24 Α.

10/97D

FORM LASER IND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-6 331-6989

		. 2-150
	1 Q.	And directing you to page 10-108 of her
2	2	testimony, referring you down to line 12. She
	3	states that, "A young child will not be able
.4		to sort out and tell the difference what part
5		of the content and what part got put into the
6		content and they remember and think occurred.
7		They just can't sort it out, and that's not a
8		problem of lying and telling the truth,
9		that's got nothing to do with it. It's a
10		matter of in the kid's way of thinking
11		thoughts at a very young level, they put the
12		two together. They do the same thing with
13		dreams."
14		That was her testimony?
15	A.	I read that, yes.
16	Q.	And referring you now to the testimony of Dr.
17		Erickson, page 9-29, line 6 through 9.
18		"Children of that age have difficulty
19		distinguishing between the memory of a real
20		act that they really experienced and the
21		memory of a fantasy. That's a very that's
22		a quality of children's thought that has been
23		studied in some detail, specifically by Dr.
24		John Flavell at Stanford University."
L		

10/97D

 \bigcirc

		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
	1	2-151
	_	That was his testimony?
	2 A.	Yes.
	3 Q.	You also talked about the use of props and
4	1	cues and anatomical dolls in your testimony?
Ľ	5 A.	Mm-hmm. Yes. Sorry.
e	5 Q.	And I refer you again to Dr. Skidmore's
7	,	testimony, page 10-101 through 103, and she
8		testified: "As I mentioned earlier,
9		throughout the interview, there are multiple
10		mistakes."
11		"It is important for the child, the
12		child's responses to the dolls, what we call
13		the stimulus item, and in this case dolls, to
14		be as much spontaneous coming from them"
15	Α.	I'm sorry. I can't find this.
16	Q.	It's on page 10-101 of Dr. Skidmore's
17		testimony.
18	A.	101?
19	Q.	101.
20	-	THE COURT: Yes.
21	A.	What line?
22	Q.	Beginning at line
23	A.	13?
24	Q.	14.

10/97D

FORM LASER (4D A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

Ċ

	1 A	2-152 14. I'm sorry. Keep going.
	2 Q	Do you have it?
	3 A	. Yes. You can continue.
4	4 Q	. "Repeatedly, the dolls are thrust or at least
ļ	5	very assertively offered to the child. Very
e	5	quickly in the interview, sometimes in doing
7	7	interviews with kids, they never touch the
8	8	dolls in the first interview. If they touch
9		them, they are just somewhat curious."
10		And Dr. Skidmore goes on on page 103,
11		line 15, "The interviewer would point to the
12		area of the doll, or if the child was
13		somewhat close to that area, the genital or
14		the buttocks area, the interviewer would very
15		specifically say, 'what do you call that?'
16		Very focal attention.
17		Frequently, before any other part of the doll
18		had been dealt with, you make sure you have a
19		common language, what do you call this?
20		Whatever the kid, what their head is. What do
21		you call this?"
22		That was her testimony with respect
23	_	to the dolls?
24	A.	Yes.

U/A/DI

FORM LASER VD A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-80 31-5989

5...

2-153 And she also, on page 10-98, talked about the 1 Q. use of projected techniques. And I refer you 2 to line 13 stating that, "So people 3 4 interviewing kids need to have a real careful training and experience in using projected 5 techniques. How not to lead, how not to 6 7 overly influence the information you get one 8 way or another." 9 Is that Dr. Skidmore's testimony 10 before the jury? 11 Α. Yes, it is. Dr. Skidmore also talked about the use of 12 Q. 13 peer pressure which you've detailed. And I 14 refer you to page 10-83 of Dr. Skidmore's 15 testimony; again, before the jury. 16 At the top of the page: "If you pull 17 one of her friends in on your side as an interviewer, you are stacking the deck. It is 18 not just a simple question about the content 19 20 you are asking about. You have added an emotional loading and the child will tend to 21 say in this case, it is my understanding that 22 the interviewer -- the child or not many 23 children want to be interviewed." 24

1/6/01

31-6969 PENGAD • 1-8: Θ A DN FORM LASER

£

2-154 1 "So, here you have a child who essentially is a stranger and now he's got 2 her a little bit, and the interview is about 3 fact-finding and trying to understand what 4 happened with the child, but the interviewer 5 6 brings in the child's friend." 7 Is that Dr. Skidmore's testimony? 8 Α. Yes. And she goes on, talking about the friend as 9 Q. 10 an emotional ally? 11 Α. Mm-hmm. Yes. And she also stated that, "It would be really 12 Ο. 13 important for this child or for any child, not to have any information that there had 14 15 been any interviews of other kinds." 16 Α. Yes. And she also talked -- or you've also talked, 17 Q. or would you agree with me that the supplying 18 of content to a child during an interview is, 19 would you say it's probably the most 20egregious thing an interviewer could do? 21 No. I don't know if it's the most -- but it's 22 Α. leading -- it's very leading. It's providing 23 24 information.

لمتحديدة

FORM LASER . VD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 . 31-6989

		2 - 1 5 5
1	Q.	And you certainly wouldn't recommend that?
2	A.	You have to be more specific.
3	Q.	Well, you certainly wouldn't recommend an
4		interviewer just going in and saying to the
5		child, "Did they take a stick and stick it in
6		your rectum?"
7	A.	I don't think that's a good question.
8	Q.	Now, you talked a little bit at the end of
9		your direct testimony about J
10		B and S 's, shall we say, disclosure. She was
11		interviewed by Susan Kelley?
12	A.	Yes.
13	Q.	She made no allegations of any kind of sexual
14		abuse?
15	A.	No.
16	Q.	And on the way home, that's when she starts
17		talking to her mother?
18	A.	Right.
19	Q.	She bursts into tears actually
20	Α.	Okay.
21	Q.	is the first thing she does.
22		Have any of the children in any of your
23		research studies burst into tears?
24	A.	Have any of the children burst into tears?

FORM LASER. ... JND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-8...-631-6989

10/97D

FORM

		2 - 1 5 6
1		No. I don't think - No.
2	Q.	And in the car on the way home, Jennifer
3		Bennett makes a disclosure about a pencil
4		being inserted into her vagina or her rectum?
5	A.	Yes.
6	Q.	And she talks about a thermometer being
7		inserted into her vagina or rectum?
8	A.	Yes.
9	Q.	She talks about a clown touching her on her
10		vagina or rectum with the clown's penis?
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	She describes how she'd been threatened with
13		her family being killed and with her being
14		killed?
15	A.	Yes.
16	Q.	And you'd agree, as you agreed on direct
17		examination, that none of those specific
18		things were mentioned by Susan Kelley in that
19		interview?
20	Α.	I agree.
21	Q.	And Ministry Table, the statements that she
22		made in September of 1984 to her mother's
23		then fiance, those disclosures had nothing to
24		do with the videotaped interview by Susan
l		

FORM LASER JUND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

0/97D

3

 \bigcirc

 Kelley which occurred many months later? A. Yes. Q. Dr. Bruck, if I could talk with you for a moment about the anatomical dolls. A. Yes. Q. You state on page 48 of your affidavit that "recent studies indicate that use of the dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who are sexually abused, and asking them whether 			2 - 1 5 7
 Q. Dr. Bruck, if I could talk with you for a moment about the anatomical dolls. A. Yes. Q. You state on page 48 of your affidavit that "recent studies indicate that use of the dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	1		Kelley which occurred many months later?
 moment about the anatomical dolls. A. Yes. Q. You state on page 48 of your affidavit that "recent studies indicate that use of the dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	2	Α.	Yes.
 A. Yes. Q. You state on page 48 of your affidavit that "recent studies indicate that use of the dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	3	Q.	Dr. Bruck, if I could talk with you for a
 9. You state on page 48 of your affidavit that "recent studies indicate that use of the dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" 10 A. Right. 11 Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" 13 A. Yes. 14 Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" 17 A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. 18 Q. You've read them? 19 A. Mm-hmm. 20 Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	4		moment about the anatomical dolls.
 Interface on page is of your affiliabilit that "recent studies indicate that use of the dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	5	A.	Yes.
 dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? M. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	6	Q.	You state on page 48 of your affidavit that
 by young children?" A. Right. Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	7		"recent studies indicate that use of the
 10 A. Right. 11 Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" 13 A. Yes. 14 Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" 17 A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. 18 Q. You've read them? 19 A. Mm-hmm. 20 Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	8		dolls does not improve accuracy of reporting
 11 Q. And that, in fact, "In some cases, children are more inaccurate with the dolls?" 13 A. Yes. 14 Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" 17 A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. 18 Q. You've read them? 19 A. Mm-hmm. 20 Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	9		by young children?"
12are more inaccurate with the dolls?"13A. Yes.14Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children15Professional Society on the Abuse of Children16Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?"17A. Can you give them to me? I've read them.18Q. You've read them?19A. Mm-hmm.20Q. And you're aware that the way that they come21up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are23experienced in the treatment of children who	10	A.	Right.
 A. Yes. Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	11	Q.	And that, in fact, "In some cases, children
 Q. Are you familiar with the "American Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	12		are more inaccurate with the dolls?"
 Professional Society on the Abuse of Children Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?" A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. Q. You've read them? A. Mm-hmm. Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	13	A.	Yes.
16Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?"17A.Can you give them to me? I've read them.18Q.You've read them?19A.Mm-hmm.20Q.And you're aware that the way that they come21up with those practice guidelines is by22asking clinicians across the country, who are23experienced in the treatment of children who	14	Q.	Are you familiar with the "American
 17 A. Can you give them to me? I've read them. 18 Q. You've read them? 19 A. Mm-hmm. 20 Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	15		Professional Society on the Abuse of Children
18Q.You've read them?19A.Mm-hmm.20Q.And you're aware that the way that they come21up with those practice guidelines is by22asking clinicians across the country, who are23experienced in the treatment of children who	16		Practice Guidelines for Anatomical Dolls?"
19A.Mm-hmm.20Q.And you're aware that the way that they come21up with those practice guidelines is by22asking clinicians across the country, who are23experienced in the treatment of children who	17	A.	Can you give them to me? I've read them.
 Q. And you're aware that the way that they come up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	18	Q.	You've read them?
 up with those practice guidelines is by asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	19	Α.	Mm-hmm.
 asking clinicians across the country, who are experienced in the treatment of children who 	20	Q.	And you're aware that the way that they come
23 experienced in the treatment of children who	21		up with those practice guidelines is by
	22		asking clinicians across the country, who are
are sexually abused, and asking them whether	23		experienced in the treatment of children who
	24		are sexually abused, and asking them whether

FORM LASEF. JND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-6 _ 631-6969

Q16/01

 \bigcirc

		2 - 1 5 8
1		or not they agree with these guidelines?
2	A.	I don't know how they come up with their
3		guidelines.
4	Q.	Would you agree that the guidelines represent
5		a consensus of clinicians across the nation?
6	A.	I really don't know.
7	Q.	And in these Practice Guidelines, the
8		statement is that, "The majority of available
9		research does not support the position that
10		the dolls are inherently too suggestive and
11		over stimulating to be useful in sexual abuse
12		investigations and evaluations." And they
13		refer
14		THE COURT: And the date?
15		MS. ROONEY: 1995.
16	Q.	And they refer to that Everson and Boat
17		study, which I believe you referenced
18		earlier?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	You disagree with the Everson and Boat Study,
21		is that correct?
22	Α.	No, I don't.
23	Q.	And they talk in here about how there have
24		been three studies using anatomical dolls as

FORM LASER ND A 🔁 PENGAD • 1-8. J31-6989

Û

2 - 159interview aides with children in the three to 1 seven-year-old age, and it found that the 2 3 dolls increased recall accuracy with little or no increase in false reports of genital 4 5 And for support on that, they touching. refer to a study by Katz, Schonfeld, Carter, 6 7 Leventhal and Cicchetti, 1995? 8 Α. Yes. Mm-hmm. A study by Saywitz, Goodman, Nicholas and 9 Q. 10 Moan in 1991? 11 Α. That's right. Mm-hmm. 12 And a study by Steward and Steward, which was Q. 13 in press at the time? Yes, but that -- they're wrong, that's their 14 Α. interpretation of that study, but anyway. 15 And in fact, they go on to state, "That in 16 Ο. contrast to those three studies is the one 17 study conducted by you, which reported high 18 rates of false assertions and false denials 19 of genital touching among children under age 20 three and a half years when the dolls were 21 used as interview aides in conjunction with 22 direct-leading and misleading questions." 23 24 So in effect, what the guidelines

FORM LASER _ UND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-8---631-6989

10/97D

2 - 160are saying, there are three studies that say 1 that the anatomical dolls are okay, and 2 there's one study conducted by you which says 3 4 that they're not so okay, is that correct? Well -- that's what the guidelines say. Α. 5 And, in fact, are you aware of a recent study 6 Q. conducted in 1997 by Goodman, Quas, 7 Batterman-Faunce? They're talking about a 8 9 memory for medical tests? 10 Α. Yes. Where I believe it's genital catheterization 11 Ο. 12 of children? 13 Α. Yes. And they found that: "Even three-year-olds 14 Q. are more likely to report a genital touch 15 actually experienced when given an 16 17 anatomically correct doll to reenact the medical tests than when only asked free-18 19 recall questions?" I have to review my notes of that study, but 20 Α. I remember reading that. But those are 21 children who had actually been touched. 22 Correct. 23 Q. They didn't have a group of children who had 24 Α.

FORM LASER ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-81 31-6989

0/6/0

		2-161
1		not been touched.
2	Q.	That's correct.
3		I don't know that you really discussed this
4		in your direct testimony a great deal, but
5		with respect to core versus peripheral
6		details
7	A.	Yes.
8	Q.	I believe you stated that you would agree
9		that peripheral details are really what the
10		studies focused on early on?
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	And you would agree that personally
13		significant events are better retained in
14		memory than less significant events such as
15		those that are typically used in most abuse
16		research studies?
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	Would you agree that there are a number of
19		studies that highlight the strength of
20		children's memory, that try to show how good
21		even very young children are at recalling
22		salient events?
23	A.	I am aware of the studies that show when
24		children are questioned non-suggestively

 \bigcirc

1under very neutral conditions, they can show2-- they are very accurate in telling. And3I've reviewed some of those studies today in4our own control groups where children are not5asked any suggestive questions when they're6quite accurate in telling about central7events, yes.

8 Q. So there are a number of studies that highlight the strength of children's memories 9 under those conditions that you've just said? 10 11 Under neutral, non-leading, non-suggestive Α. conditions, children can come to tell many 12 significant events that have happened to 13 14 them, yes.

Q. And would you also agree that there are numerous examples in the literature and the studies and the research that talk about the difference between the ability of the child to remember a core event versus the ability of a child to remember peripheral details of an event?

22 A. No.

23 Q. You don't agree with that?

A. No, I don't -- I -- you have to refresh my

2-162

2 - 1631 memory on what those studies are. 2 THE COURT: Is this referring to the same studies that you were asking about just 3 a moment ago? The studies regarding the --4 MS. ROONEY: The studies in general, 5 the studies that she has in fact testified 6 7 to. 8 [By Ms. Rooney:] Well, are you familiar with literature and 9 Ο. the studies and the research that talk about 10 the difference between the ability of not 11 only adults but also children to remember 12 13 core events more easily --Well, this is a general --14Α. 15 Q. -- and more accurately? 16 Α. Yes. I'm sorry. 17 Q. You are. 18 Α. I'm sorry. Continue. And would you agree that part of the reason 19 Q. for the memory of the core events is the 20 importance that the child attributes to those 21 events versus the importance that a child 22 attributes to the peripheral detail, such as, 23 the color of someone's beard? 24

(

JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8: 631-6989

FORM LASER

2 - 164Well, they're more salient and they become 1 Α. encoded in memory, and it's the gist of 2 events that do get coded in memory and these 3 other things unless they have personal 4 5 significance, do tend to drop out over time. So you would agree that the gist of a memory, 6 Q. 7 of a core of a memory for a child, is more accurately recalled than sort of the 8 9 surrounding details? I -- I have to really think of specific 10 Α. 11 studies that have specifically compared central to just -- to peripheral recall. But 12 13 I'm sure there are some that show that children are much better, or adults are much 14 15 better at the more central ones. You agree with that in any event? 16 Ο. 17Α. Yes. Now, you talked, I believe it was yesterday, 18 Q. about the inoculation study that you 19 20 conducted? 21 Α. Yes. I believe the article's entitled, "I Hardly 22 Q. Cried When I Got My Shot!?" 23 Yes. 24 Α.

		2 - 165
1	Q.	There was a phase one of that study that
2		found that there were no effects of
3		suggestion on children's recall of a salient
4		event
5	A.	Right.
6	Q.	that involved their own bodies, their own
7		feelings and their own actions?
8	A.	Yes. I talked about that yesterday.
9	Q.	You've talked about phase one?
10	A.	Yes, I did.
11	Q.	You also talked about phase two, when you
12		modify the study a little bit, and then found
13		that there is a somewhat greater latitude in
14		the scope of children's suggestibility than
15		indicated in phase one?
16	A.	Yes. I talked Can I explain what I said
17		yesterday or
18	Q.	My question is simply that phase one
19	Α.	We did not find differences.
20	Q.	And then you modified it in some manner, and
21		then in phase two, you found some
22		differences?
23	Α.	Well, we modified it and then there is a year
24		that passed. There was also a delay between

.

FORM LASER LUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800 J31-6989

10/97D

.

 \bigcirc

		2 - 1 6 6
1		the event and the questioning period, yes.
2	Q.	So it changed in some manner?
3	A.	I beg your pardon?
4	Q.	The study, phase two, was different from
5		phase one?
6	A.	Well, it was much longer from the from the
7		I'm sorry the inoculation. Phase one,
8		we asked children about the inoculation five
9		to seven days right after.
10	Q.	And you asked them about the pain, is that
11		correct, that was about the pain
12	A.	We asked about pain and crying in both
13		phases, yes.
14	Q.	Would you agree that those questions really
15		have to do with the child's emotions, how it
16		felt, did it hurt?
17	A.	The hurt had to do with I don't know.
18		That's an interesting question. Emotions? I
19		really don't know what's involved in
20		reporting hurt.
21	Q.	Well, did you ask the child
22	Α.	There are physical certainly there are
23		physical qualities to remember, and when we
24		questioned them I'm sorry at time one,

FORM LASER LUND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-80. U31-6989

U/8/01

.'

Ŭ

		2-167
1		they hurt. I mean
2	Q.	Because they got a shot?
3	A.	The inoculation was still hurting them a week
4		later. So at that point I don't know if we
5		were questioning them about their emotions or
6		just their physical sensations.
7	Q.	Well, would you agree that pain is a feeling?
8	A.	Yes.
9	Q.	You feel pain?
10	A.	If there is a physical sensation, yes.
11	Q.	So you were questioning the child about the
12		pain that they were feeling or not feeling,
13		depending upon the child?
14	Α.	We asked them the question, "How much did it
15		hurt," right.
16	Q.	You didn't ask them the question whether or
17		not they actually got a shot?
18	A.	No, we didn't ask them.
19	Q.	And would you agree with me that those Simon
20		Says Studies that were conducted back in
21		1986, they sort of involve the child's
22		participation in the event versus a child
23		just observing an event?
24	Α.	Well, there is one as my memory is, there

FORM LASER L 4D A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80. .31-6989

Ú

2-168 is one study that was conducted by Goodman 1 and Reed in 1986, so I don't think there were 2 studies. I think there was one. 3 4 But they refer to it as the Simon Says Q. Studies because there were subsequent ones 5 after that? 6 Well, some people refer to -- I mean, I don't 7 Α. think Goodman refers to them as the Simon 8 Says Studies, but there was one conducted in 9 1986. 10 And they found that participation in a real-11 ο. 12 life event heightened the children's 13 resistance to suggestion? 14 Α. I don't think that was the 1986 study. I 15 think it's the 1991 study. 16 Ο. And did they in fact find that? Well, I didn't know I was going to testify 17 Α. 18 about that, but we actually wrote a critique about their conclusions about participation. 19 You disagree with the Goodman findings that 20 Q. participation in a real-life event heighten 21 the children's resistance to suggestion? 22 Can I review my notes on this before I answer 23 Α. the question? 24

1-6989

FUHM LASEH NU A 😶 PENGAD • 1-81 31-6989

۲. بر

2 - 1691 THE COURT: You may. (Witness examines document.) 2 Α. 3 In our book on page 69, we have a footnote that modifies their interpretation. And, I 4 mean, it's been several years since I wrote 5 this, but I -- certainly when we wrote this, 6 I can tell you, I went through the study many 7 8 times. 9 So you interpret their study differently than Q. 10 they interpreted it, is that correct? We interpret the results differently than 11 Α. 12 they do, yes. 13 Would you agree -- and I'm referring now back Q. 14 to the 1986 study, not the 1991 --15 Α. Right. -- that their findings in that study 16 Q. indicated that children showed high 17 18 resistance to suggestion about actions that 19 might be associated with abuse? 20 I haven't read that study for a very long Α. time, so--21 22 So you're not sure about that? Q. I'm not sure, but it was one of their early 23 Α. studies, and generally I can say that I agree 24

FORM LASER BUND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

10/97D

		2 - 1 7 0
1		with their interpretations of those data.
2	Q.	Now, you spent some time talking about the
3		disclosure process and how that comes about?
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	And have you ever had a child, a child who
6		had been sexually abused, disclose to you?
7	A.	I don't understand.
8	Q.	Have you ever personally observed a
9		disclosure process by a child who's been
10		sexually abused?
11	A.	Uhm, yes.
12	Q.	How many times?
13	Α.	I'd have to go back and look at my notes from
14		when I spent time at Northshore Hospital. So
15		I can't
16	Q.	And is that when you were observing other
17		clinicians so that you I believe you said,
18		so you could learn the process?
19	Α.	Yes. Well, I wasn't there to learn the
20		process. I was there to understand what
21		happened. I mean, I have no intent of ever
22		becoming a clinician or to learn these
23		techniques myself.
24	Q.	But you want to be aware of the process and

FORM LASEF JND A COD PENGAD . 1-6 631-6989

Nage 2

		2 - 1 7 1
1		how it works?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	And there were children, while you were doing
4		this, would you call it an observation, or
5		what would you call it?
6	A.	I don't know. Visit.
7	Q.	While you were
8	A.	A study leave.
9	Q.	When you were doing this visit
10	A.	I was allowed to sit in on evaluations that
11		clinicians conducted with families and
12		children.
13	Q.	And during some of those evaluations children
14		actually disclosed sexual abuse?
15	A.	Yes.
16	Q.	Now, did you participate in it, or were you
17		an observer?
18	Α.	I did not participate.
19	Q.	Now, you referred to, I believe it was
20		guidelines, that Roland Summit had come up
21		with, and that was sort of what you believe
22		was in the minds of the police?
23	Α.	No, I don't think I said that. I said and I
24		don't think that Roland Summit came up with

FORM LASER BOND A 🚯 PENGAD 1 1 800-631-6989

 \bigcirc

10/97D

.

guidelines. I think that Roland Summit tried 1 2 to describe the phenomenon that he -- he tried to describe a phenomenon of disclosure, 3 and it was called the sexual accommodation 4 syndrome or something. 5 6 Q. And in part, that was a child might disclose a little bit, recant a little bit, tell a 7 little bit more, go back and forth, that was 8 9 sort of his theory at the time? 10 Α. I don't know if it was a theory. I don't 11 think it was a theory. 12 What was it? Q. 13 Α. I think it was just a way to describe a series of events that might be helpful to 14 15 clinicians in terms of their practices in 16 understanding why children who have been 17 sexually abused might go through these --18 Ο. Stages? 19 Α. Stages, behaviors, whatever, yes. 20 And you indicated that Roland Summit had Q. never seen a sexually abused child and that 21 22 he came up with this theory? 23 Α. I've read that. 24 Q. Do you know that?

PENGAD • 1-8(~-031-6989

FORM LASER LUND A

2 - 172

2-173 Well, the book -- there's a book that Debbie 1 Α. Nathan and Mike Snedeker (phonetic spellings) 2 3 wrote in which they say that he never assessed sexually abused children himself. 4 5 Q. Similar to you? 6 Α. Yes. 7 Now, are you aware there was a book by, I Q. believe it's Karen Kuehnle, in 1996, 8 Assessing Allegations of Child Sexual Abuse. 9 Are you familiar with that text at all? 10 11 Α. What's her name? It's -- I could be saying it wrong. I could 12 Q. 13 spell it for you. 14 Could you spell it? Α. 15 Q. K-u-e-h-n-l-e. 16 Α. She's from Florida? 17 Ο. Yes. 18 Yes, I've seen -- well, I've glanced Α. 19 through --20 Q. That book? 21 Α. Mm-hmm. And in that she talks about how disclosure 22 Q. tends to be a process rather than a single 23 24 event --

10/97D

FORM LASE!. JND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-6. --631-6989

		2 - 174
1	A.	Yes.
2	Q.	with children disclosing
3	A.	Well, I don't know
4	Q.	further pieces of information
5	A.	Okay.
6	Q.	over time?
7	A.	Well, if that's what she writes, yes.
8	Q.	Which is similar in theory to what Roland
9		Summit said?
10	A.	Mm-hmm.
11	Q.	And you would agree that, or do you know,
12		that this book by Karen Kuehnle is sort of
13		considered to be, if you will, a primer for
14		people who are assessing allegations?
15	A.	I don't know that. Is
16	Q.	Can
17	A.	Okay.
18	Q.	Now, you indicate I'm referring you now to
19		page 9 of your affidavit that: "There is
20		little scientific evidence to support the
21		view that children may not readily or
22		consistently disclose sexual abuse when
23		directly asked about it?"
24	Α.	Yes.
l		

FORM LASEF JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-6 631-6989

 \bigcirc

		2-175
1	Q.	And you go on in your affidavit to talk about
2		this Bradley and Wood article?
3	A.	Yes.
4	Q.	And you rely upon this Bradley and Wood, I
5		suppose it's a study, actually, the Bradley
6		and Wood Study?
7	A.	It is a study, yes.
8	Q.	And you rely upon that study to support the
9		statement about children not readily or
10		consistently disclosing sexual abuse when
11		directly asked about it?
12	A.	Yes. And there's another study.
13	Q.	I believe that's the Gray Study?
14	A.	No. Johns and McGraw.
15	Q.	If we could just take a moment and talk about
16		this Bradley and Wood Study.
17	Α.	Okay.
18	Q.	Now, you're familiar with the term coding?
19	Α.	Coding
20	Q.	Coding.
21	A.	How you code an interview or
22	Q.	Yes. How, when you do a study, that coding is
23		done, it's important to establish the
24		reliability of the coding?

ומאוח

C PENGAU 1- -631-6989

Ĵ

2-176 1 Α. Yes. Okay. 2 Could you just tell us what coding is in that Q. 3 context? If you want -- could you tell me more about 4 Α. 5 it in terms of study, so I don't -- I can kind of tell you exactly --6 7 I'm just asking, in a general term, coding is Q. something that is done in research studies to 8 9 further the validity of the results? Α. Sometimes, for example, if you have an -- you 10 11 have a description from a child and the 12 question is, "Does the child make an allegation?" You have someone read through 13 14 and make a judgment, yes or no. You want to 15 know if someone else reads the same thing will they in fact make the same judgment. And 16 17 so, you have sometimes one code -- two coders, or more than two coders, look at the 18 same piece of data to make these subjective 19 20 judgments to see how consistent they are. Because you want to make sure, sort of like 21 Q. we've been talking about interviewer bias, 22 that one person isn't sort of putting their 23 own spin on the study, you're sort of trying 24

LASEH ND A CO PENGAD - 1-8 131-6989

2 - 177to establish the reliability of the coding so 1 2 that --You want to make sure you have an objective 3 Α. 4 process that you're using, yes, that can be 5 replicated. 6 And you're aware that for this Bradley and Q. Wood Study, they didn't establish the 7 reliability of the coding? 8 9 THE COURT: They did or did not? 10 MS. ROONEY: They did not. 11 Α. My understanding is that they selected cases that had been validated by CPS workers. 12 But are you aware that they did not establish 13 Q. the reliability of the coding for this 14 15 particular study? 16 Α. What was the coding? Well, they had -- one of the authors of the 17 Ο. article, I don't know if it was Bradley or 18 Wood, but one of the authors who knew what 19 the hypothesis was, simply monitored the 20 coding -- the coder's adherence to their 21 system. In other words, would you agree that 22 23 very often it's helpful to have a blind coder, someone to come in who doesn't know 24

		2 - 178
1	·•	what they're looking for so they can just
2		sort of evaluate the research on its face?
3	A.	This I I really this is not a very
4		I don't really understand your question
5		because they got these interviews, right?
6	Q.	Mm-hmm.
7	А.	And what okay. So what they had to do was
8		to decide whether or not the child had denied
9		in the first interview, or whether there was
10		recantations.
11	Q.	Right.
12	A.	So that was probably what the coding was.
13	Q.	That's correct.
14	A.	Whether there was denial or whether there was
15		recantation.
16	Q.	That's correct.
17	A.	And what you're telling me is you're reading
18		from your reading of the article, they did
19		not have two people make this determination
20		and then compare?
21	Q.	That's correct.
22	A.	Okay.
23	Q.	Do you know that or not?
24	A.	I don't know that.

FORM LASER LUND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-80. U31-6989

0/8/01

 \bigcirc

2 - 179Now, this study, all of -- where they got 1 Q. sort of their subjects were from the New 2 Mexico Department of Protective and 3 Regulatory Services, is that correct? 4 I don't have the study in front of me, but if 5 Α. you're reading from the method's section, I 6 agree with you. 7 Well, the way that they conducted their Q. 8 study, they studied the social service case 9 files of 249 child victims of sexual abuse, 10 and all of those were reported to sort of 11 their child protection agency in New Mexico, 12 and all of the cases that they looked at were 13 substantiated or validated for sexual abuse, 14 is that correct? 15 16 Α. Yes. Now, you're aware that if we talk about the 17 Q. demographics of that study, 76 percent of the 18 victims were Hispanic? 19 Right. 20 Α. And only 15 percent were non-Hispanic whites? 21 Ο. 22 Α. Yes. Would you agree that that limits the 23 Q. generalized ability of these results to 24

-ORM LASER I ID A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-80 J1-6989

10/97D

, ,

		2 - 1 8 0
1		children in this particular case who are non-
2		Hispanic whites?
3	Α.	One would have to do another study to see if
4		there are the same patterns of disclosure,
5		that's true.
6	Q.	And you also are aware that in this study,
7		the Bradley and Wood Study, the perpetrator
8		was a member of the child's household in 59
9		percent of the cases, is that correct?
10	A.	I don't I don't remember those figures,
11		but that's probably typical of these kinds of
12		case loads, yes.
13	Q.	And are you aware that of the remaining 41
14		percent, Bradley and Wood don't even identify
15		who the perpetrator was?
16	Α.	Okay.
17	Q.	So we have no idea of knowing if any of the
18		perpetrators in the Bradley and Wood Study
19		were day-care providers?
20	A.	Okay.
21	Q.	And it would be helpful to know if the
22		Bradley and Wood Study had day-care providers
23		in them so we could apply it to the facts of
24		this particular case, would you agree with
	1	

FORM LASER BUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-600-w1-6989

10/97D

 \mathbf{C}

me? 1 What you're saying -- what you're asking is -2 Α. - what you're saying is, it would be very 3 helpful to see how children who have been 4 abused, where we know they've been abused by 5 day-care workers, how they come to make 6 allegations of abuse. And it would be in 7 terms of any case, I mean, one wants the 8 evidence that most closely aligned with it; 9 in the real world --10 Absolutely. 11 Q. -- that rarely happens. 12 Α. But my question is, essentially, you're 13 Q. relying on the Bradley and Wood Study for the 14 proposition that states that children may not 15 readily or consistently disclose sexual abuse 16 when directly asked about it, and yet, the 17 children that were studied in that study, we 18 don't know who the perpetrators were, is that 19 correct? 20 I really have to read through that paper 21 Α. more, but they were validated cases, right? 22 They were all validated cases. 23 Q. Okay. 24 Α.

2-181

-04M LASER _ UND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8U - 631-6989

10/97D

		2 - 182
1	Q .	And if we could talk about the cases, in
2		fact, they only studied 67 percent of the
3		cases that were validated in 1992. They sort
4		of picked out the ones they wanted to study.
5	A.	Mm-hmm.
6	Q.	And then again, in 1993, they only picked out
7		56 percent?
8	A.	Mm-hmm.
9	Q.	So they didn't even look at all of the cases?
10	A.	They probably looked you would have to put
11		Dr. Wood on the stand and ask him.
12	Q.	But you relied on his study in your
13		affidavit?
14	A.	Yes, I did.
15	Q.	Now, the other thing that is perhaps
16		interesting about this study, the way they
17		made their evaluations was only through the
18		reading of the social services case files,
19		correct?
20	Α.	Yes. They had the case files. They didn't
21		have the children.
22	Q.	They didn't have the children?
23	A.	No.
24	Q.	So they looked at the social services' notes?

FORM LASER ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8 231-6989

10/97D

2-183 1 Α. They -- Yes. 2 Q. And it was on the basis of the social services' notes that they made their call as 3 to whether or not a child had recanted or a 4 5 child had not recanted, correct? 6 Α. Yes. Now, you in fact testified here that in your 7 Q. opinion, notes from the social services can 8 9 be in fact useless? 10 Α. Absolutely. Because sometimes they contain 11 Ο. misinformation? 12 13 Α. Yes. 14 They contain incorrect information? Q. 15 Α. Yes. They might in fact contain a recantation when 16 Q. 17 a recantation never happened? 18 Α. That's possible. So there's no way of knowing what's the 19 Q. reliability of those social services' notes? 20 It's a real problem with these studies. 21 Α. With this study in particular? 22 Q. With also the Jones and McGraw Study, which 23 Α. is children in Denver. 24

ומינ

id A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

FORM LASER I

2 - 184Because, again, they were relying on those Ο. 1 types of notes? 2 They rely on the notes. We don't, you know --3 Α. they go by the best they -- I mean, they're 4 trying their best to get some evidence, and 5 that's what they have. They certainly can't б go back and interview or be present at the 7 interview of all these children, so they are 8 doing these retrospective studies, yes. 9 So the entire study, again, was just based on 10 Q. a review of those social services' case 11 files? 12 Α. Yes. 13 Now, the Sorenson and Snow article in 1991, 14 Q. or study --15 Mm-hmm. Α. 16 -- is it fair to say that you've criticized 17 Q. that? 18 We do. Α. 19 You don't in fact agree with their findings? 20 Q. It's not a matter of agreeing with their 21 Α. findings. It's a matter of problems in 22 understanding how they selected their 23 subjects in terms of -- the study is so 24

FORM LASER { . D A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 . 1-6989

וכישיכ

5 C poorly described it's very hard to understand why they selected some subjects and not others. It's very hard to know in fact whether these cases are truly cases of children who have been sexually abused. We write about this extensively in our book. I don't know if you want me to go through it, but --

Q. Well --

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

-- it's a very problematic study because 10 Α. these are from their own clinical case files 11 where they've done therapy with these 12 children and there is a lot of doubt in the 13 minds of experts about whether -- what 14 proportion of the children in this case file 15 in fact are validated cases of sexual abuse. 16 Would you agree that this particular study, 17 Ο. Sorenson and Snow, is cited quite frequently 18 by people about recantation rates? 19 I think it's cited very frequently. 20 Α. Would you say it's sort of the foremost study 21 Q. in the area that people rely on? 22 I think that before the Bradley and Wood Α. 23 Study came along it was. 24

2-185

2-186 And Sorenson and Snow, they were actually 1 Q. talking about -- they were actually looking 2 at children versus the Bradley and Wood Study 3 which was looking at the notes of the social 4 services' records? 5 Well, my understanding -- Okay. Can I just 6 Α. take a minute to --7 THE COURT: You may. 8 -- find this in my book? In our book. Α. 9 THE COURT: Ms. Rooney, I assume that 10 you have a bit more to go. 11 MS. ROONEY: I could probably be done 12 13 by one o'clock. THE COURT: Well, all right. So about 14 another 25 minutes? I'll remember that. But 15 let's break now anyway for lunch. 16 We'll resume at twenty-five of two. 17 18 [Luncheon Recess 12:33 p.m.] 19 20 21 22 23 24

10/97D

FORM LASER .

1		2-187 AFTERNOON SESSION
2	(1.1	3 p.m.)
	(1.4	5 p.m.)
3		
4		MAGGIE BRUCK, RESUMED
5	CROS	S-EXAMINATION, RESUMED
6	<u>BY M</u>	S. ROONEY:
7	Q.	Dr. Bruck, I believe when we left off we were
8		talking about the Sorenson and Snow
9	A.	Yes. Okay.
10	Q.	Study?
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	One of the findings in that study was that
13		when asked, only 75 percent of the children
14		denied being sexually abused
15	A.	Right.
16	Q.	is that correct?
17	Α.	That's in their paper, yes.
18	Q.	And there's also another study in 1992 by
19		Lawson and Chaffin
20	A.	Yes.
21	Q.	are you familiar with that study?
22	A.	Yes.
23	Q.	And the findings in that study were that only
24		43 percent of the children made a verbal

-

FORM LASER BOND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800-831-6989

10/97D

 \bigcirc

2 - 188disclosure of abuse at the initial interview? 1 2 Α. Yes. Dr. Bruck, would you agree with me that it's 3 Q. probably one of the most difficult things for 4 a child to do is to talk about sexual abuse? 5 I can't answer that. I don't know if that's 6 Α. 7 the most difficult thing. I --8 Q. I'm sorry, did you --I don't think you should ask me. I don't 9 Α. 10 really think I should tender --11 THE COURT: If you can't render an 12 opinion or --13 Α. I can wax on --14 THE COURT: No. 15 -- but I don't think that it would be Α. 16 relevant to the Court. 17 THE COURT: Okay. Well, have you ever stated before that you 18 Q. believe it's an easy thing for children to 19 20 talk about? I don't think I've ever written that it's Α. 21 22 easy. Dr. Bruck, do you recall testifying in 1991 23 Ο. 24 down in North Carolina?

🕑 PENGAD • 1-8C 31-6989

コーアシー

É

FORM LASER I

¥ QĮ

نمہ نے ک

1 A. I remember it, yes, I do.

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

,31-6989

PENGAD + 1-8-

Θ

A DM

FORM LASER

Q. You were asked a question, "So wouldn't it be fair to say that one of the least favorite subjects of children to talk about, whether it's with their own parents or strangers, would be anything that occurred to them of a sexual nature?"

Answer: "Oh, I don't agree with you, Mr. Hart. I think that children in fact love to talk about those kind of things especially among themselves. I have seen my daughter and her friends carrying on in matters that are related to all kinds of sexual things while taking a bath, when they were four and five years-old, just having a wonderful, hilarious time about it - wonderful, hilarious time about it."

 18
 Do you recall testifying to that?

 19
 THE COURT: Do you recall that

 20
 testimony?

 21
 A. Yes, I do.

 22
 O. Do you still agree with that that that that

Q. Do you still agree with that, that children
love to talk about sexual abuse, or has your
position changed?

2-189

2 - 190Well, I said that seven years ago during the 1 Α. very first time I ever appeared in criminal 2 3 court --4 Has your position changed or do you still 0. believe that children enjoy talking about 5 sexual abuse? 6 7 Well, I don't think in that question I was Α. actually asked -- I was talking about whether 8 children like talking about sexual abuse. I 9 10 mean, I think this is --11 MR. WILLIAMS: Your Honor, I'm going 12 to object to the form of the question. I'd 13 like to hear the question again that was asked of her at that 1991 trial. I think it 14 15 was sexual things --16 THE COURT: I think she answered that. The witness said that it was not about 17 18 sexual abuse. 19 MR. WILLIAMS: Right. 20 THE COURT: Next question. 21 (By Ms. Rooney:) Dr. Bruck, if we could turn now to page 9 22 Ο. again of your affidavit, when you're talking 23 about threats. 24

FORM LASEF JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-(631-6989

FORM L

-		2-191
1	A.	(Witness examines document.)
2	Q.	And on page 9 of your affidavit, you state
3		that: "The available evidence . does not
4		support . common assumption that sexually
5		abused children do not disclose because of
6		explicit threats made by the perpetrators"
7	Α.	Yes.
8	Q.	is that what you state in your affidavit?
9	A.	Yes.
10	Q.	And for support of that proposition, you cite
11		to, I believe it's a 1989 study by Maria
12		Sauzier?
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	Are you aware, Dr. Bruck, that on page 458 of
15		a paper entitled, "Disclosure of Child Sexual
16		Abuse For Better or For Worse," written by
17		Maria Sauzier, when she's talking about this
18		study, she states, "Threats also seem to
19		prevent children from telling immediately,
20		only 23 percent did."
21	A.	It must be a different study, or I really
22		have to go back if you're going to
23		question me about this, I really have to go
24		back to my notes and see where I got this
	1	

•

FORM LASER . JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-81, 331-6989

Ú

10/97D

2 - 192information from. My understanding is that 1 2 there were different surveys that she did. I wrote this a very long time ago. But --3 You wrote the affidavit a very long time ago? 4 Q. No. I wrote this section about threats awhile 5 Α. . 6 ago and --7 Q. In fact, it's in your book almost word for word, is it not? 8 9 It's in the book, yes. Α. 10 Q. And you just took it from your book and put it in this affidavit? 11 12 Α. Yes, I did. 13 Did you review the Maria Sauzier Study before Ο. 14 you put this information in your affidavit? 15 No, I did not. Α. 16 Q. Are you aware that according to Maria 17 Sauzier, she only did one study in 1989 about 18 threats and children? 19 Α. Okay. And in fact, in the study for which you 20 Q. 21 indicate this statement is supported, she states that: "Threats also seem to prevent 22 23 children from telling immediately?" 24 I have --Α.

PENGAU . 1-8' 531-6989

D V DA

FURM LASER

2 - 193Would it be helpful if I showed you the 1 Ο. 2 study? I would -- it would take me awhile to go Α. 3 through the study. I'd be glad to reply. If 4 there's a mistake, I'd be glad to go on 5 record that it's a mistake, but I have to go 6 back and look at it carefully to see where we 7 got this information from. 8 So is it your testimony that in your 9 Ο. affidavit when you refer to the Maria Sauzier 10 Study as support for the proposition that: 11 "The available evidence . does not support 12 the common assumption that sexually abused 13 children do not disclose because of explicit 14 threats made by . perpetrators, " that perhaps 15 this study does not in fact stand for that 16 proposition? 17 I don't know. 18 Α. It could in fact be a mistake? 19 0. I could have made a mistake. I have to see 20 Α. what I wrote here, which was that the 21 likelihood of disclosure was unrelated to 22 threats. It's not how many threats there 23 were, but once there was a threat, what was 24

FORM LASER LUND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8(L J31-6985

10/97D

2 - 194the likelihood of disclosure. I have to look 1 2 at the data again and go back to my notes. And if it's a mistake, I certainly will --3 4 Q. In that study Maria Sauzier found that most children who are subjected to intercourse 5 with aggression never told? 6 7 That was intercourse with aggression. Α. Yes. 8 Ο. 9 Α. Okay. Do you agree with that? 10 Q. 11 Α. I have -- I really -- you know something -- I -- if it's written there, I have to read the 12 whole study to go back to see how we reached 13 these conclusions. 14 So you're not prepared to testify with 15 Q. respect to that portion of your affidavit? 16 I'm not prepared to, unless you want to give Α. 17 me some time to go through this study very 18 19 carefully, to tell you where this statement came from. 20 Q. Well, in your affidavit, you indicate that 21 it's based on the Maria --22 Yes. 23 Α. -- Sauzier Study? 24 Q.

FORM LASER ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8 31-6989

10/9/

		2 - 1 9 5
1	Α.	Yes.
2	Q.	So it's fair to say that what you're saying
3		in your affidavit about, "There's a common
4		assumption that sexually abused children do
5		not disclose because of explicit threats made
6		by perpetrators," you're relying on the Maria
7		Sauzier Study for that?
8	Α.	That was one of them.
9	Q.	You also rely on this 1993 Study by Gray?
10	A.	Yes.
11	Q.	And you're aware that the only cases that
12		they reviewed in that study were cases that
13		were referred for prosecution?
14	A.	Yes.
15	Q.	And that there was disclosure before
16		questioning of those children in two-thirds
17		of the cases?
18	Α.	Yes.
19	Q.	But in fact, there's no breakdown in that
20		study in terms of the age of the children, is
21		that correct?
22	Α.	I think there is, but
23	Q.	Can you point to me where in the study
24	A.	No, I

FORM LASEF JND A 🏵 PENGAD•1-€ 831-6989

10/97D

 $\dot{\mathbb{O}}$

2 - 1961 Q. -- there's a breakdown of age? 2 Α. I can't now. 3 Q. And also, there's no breakdown in that study 4 with respect to the child's relationship to 5 the perpetrator, correct? 6 Α. I can't remember. I would be surprised. 7 If I were to tell you that there was not --Ο. 8 Α. Okay. 9 Q. -- any breakdown? 10 Α. Okay. 11 Q. And would you agree with me that in that 12 particular study, the Gray Study, they're talking about a prosecution sample, correct? 13 14 Α. Absolutely. 15 And that in fact differs from a whole Ο. 16 population because, would you agree that those cases that are referred for prosecution 17 18 probably are with the kids that tend to 19 disclose? 20 Well, it's probably the closest to this case Α. 21 here where there were kids referred for 22 prosecution. But you would agree that there are a lot of 23 Ο. cases out there that never make it to the 24

10/97D

FORM LASEF DND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-5 631-6989

Ĺ

		2 - 197
1		prosecution
2	A.	Yes, I would.
3	Q.	And that the children involved in
4		prosecutions may in fact differ from the
5		children who are involved in cases that never
6		reach the prosecution level?
7	A.	Yes.
8	Q.	Dr. Bruck, would you agree with me that not
9		all children are suggestible?
10	A.	I would agree that there are differing
11		amounts of that it is a continuum and that
12		we all differ in the degree to which we're
13		suggestible.
14	Q.	Would you agree that some children are highly
15		resistant to suggestion?
16	A.	I have said this in my testimony. There are
17		some children who are highly resistant to
18		suggestion.
19	Q.	In fact, you indicated that some three-year-
20		olds in your own studies, no matter what you
21		do
22	A.	Right.
23	Q.	you can't get them to say what you're
24		expecting them to say or want them to say?

FORM LASER (ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8 531-6989

0/8/01

1	A.	2-198 Within the confines of our studies, that's
2		absolutely true.
3	Q.	And you would agree that the research that's
4	¥.	
		been conducted, the studies that have been
5		conducted, is of no help in predicting which
6		child would be in which category?
7	A.	As of today I think that we're just beginning
8		that kind of investigation of, what are the
9		characteristics. But for your purposes today,
10		I think that we're a very long way of knowing
11		that, yes.
12	Q.	Are you aware, Dr. Bruck, that Stephen Ceci -
13		- with whom you collaborate a great deal, is
14		that fair to say?
15	A.	Yes.
16	Q.	Has recently noted that his research is often
17		misused by false memory advocates to persuade
18		juries that children are easily led by
19		suggestion and that their memories are not to
20		be trusted. Are you aware that Dr. Ceci said
21		that
22	A.	No.
23	Q.	in 1996?
24	A.	No.

FORM LASER ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8 331-6989

0/970

Ú

2 - 1991 Q. Are you aware that Dr. Ceci said that he himself noted that to obtain his result, the 2 3 pressure on children must be extensive and 4. intensive and that his own position is that 5 children are generally believable and resistant to suggestion except under the very 6 specific extreme interviewing that was the 7 8 focus of his research. Are you aware that he 9 made that statement in 1996? 10 Α. No, I'm not. Dr. Bruck, you're familiar with the term 11 Q. 12 ecological validity? 13 Α. Yes, I am. And that essentially means that you're 14 Ο. looking at the degree to which an experiment 15 16 mirrors many of the important factors of the 17 situation that it purports to make 18 generalizations to, is that an accurate 19 statement of that? 20 Α. Yes. And you've stated, I believe it's in the 21 Q. preface of your book, Jeopardy in the 22 Courtroom, that: "Although much of the 23 research on children's recollection is being 24

PENGAD • 1-80 , 31-6989

FORM LASER ND A

Θ

(...

2 - 200carried out in more naturalistic contexts, 1 this does not in itself make it generalizable 2 to a particular court case unless the 3 4 research contact closely mirrors the factors at bar." Do you still agree with that 5 6 statement? Yes, for a study in particular, yes. 7 Α. For a particular study? 8 Q. 9 Α. Yes. Do you agree with the statement that the 10 Q. studies that you've talked about here today 11 have limited applicability to sexual abuse 12 13 situations? 14 Α. No, I don't agree. So you're saying that the studies you've 15 Ο. talked about today are meant to be applied to 16 children who are or have been sexually 17 18 abused? Oh, I'm sorry. I told you before that I think 19 Α. that the studies that I've talked about today 20 raise issues about children who come to make 21 claims of sexual abuse who initially denied 22 these claims. 23 So your assumption, when you're talking about 24 Q.

- UMM LASEH INU A CO PENGAD - 1-8' 531-6969

2 - 2011 a case, is that the children are not telling 2 the truth? I never characterize these children as lying 3 Α. 4 or not telling the truth. 5 I think I'm a little bit confused. I believe Q. 6 you said earlier --I think I'm a little bit confused. 7 Α. I believe you said earlier today that your 8 Q. 9 studies are not meant to be applied to children who have been sexually abused? 10 11 Α. Right. And yet, you're saying now that the studies 12 ο. 13 are applicable to children who have not been sexually abused but may have claimed to have 14 been sexually abused, is that correct? 15 Okay. I think that the studies that we've Α. 16 conducted are applicable to cases where 17 18 children come to make allegations of sexual 19 abuse. 20 That are untrue? 0. That are untrue? Well, we never know whether 21 Α. 22 they're true or untrue, do we? I'm just trying to understand if you're 23 Ο. saying that your research applies to a 24

5

2 - 202population of children who have been sexual 1 2 abused? I believe your answer to that is no. You would not use your research and apply it 3 4 to --5 Α. Oh, to confirm that --6 Q. -- a sexually abused --7 -- a child had been --Α. 8 Q. -- population? -- sexually abused, for example? 9 Α. 10 Ο. Not to confirm. 11 Α. Yes. Would you apply your research studies and the 12 Q. laboratory studies that you've talked about 13 today --14 15 Α. Mm-hmm. -- to a population of children who have been 16 Q. 17 sexually abused? I believe you testified earlier that you would not do that. 18 Okay. I'm sorry. But how -- could you explain 19 Α. to me what you mean "apply?" I mean, give me 20 an example about how I, you know -- of how 21 you might think I could use these to that 22 kind of sample and then I can maybe 23 understand what you're talking about and 24

.....

10/97D

VD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

FORM LASER

-		2 - 2 0 3
1		answer your question.
2	Q.	Your testimony here today?
3	A.	Yes.
4	Q.	You're using your research studies and
5		applying them to the children who testified
6		before a jury, and that jury convicted the
7		defendant
8	A.	Yes.
9	Q.	of sexual abuse?
10	A.	Right.
11	Q.	You are now applying your research to those
12		children?
13	A.	I see. You're calling those children sexually
14		abused?
15	Q.	Yes. Along with the jury, I am.
16	A.	Okay. I think that in the terms of this case
17		and the scenario that you've set up that my
18		studies can be used to in fact raise
19		questions and issues about those children,
20		yes.
21	Q.	Because these are children who have claimed
22		to be sexually abused or because these are
23		children who have been sexually abused?
24	A.	Because

 \bigcirc

2 - 204Are you differing -- are you making a 1 Q. 2 differentiation there? THE COURT: Let me clarify for 3 counsel and the witness that I don't see my 4 role here in deciding whether or not the 5 children were in fact sexually abused. 6 7 MS. ROONEY: I agree with that. 8 THE COURT: That's not my role. 9 MS. ROONEY: I agree. 10 THE COURT: And therefore, the 11 relevance of the question? MS. ROONEY: As to whether or not 12 these research studies, for which she has 13 testified, have any applicability to this 14 15 case at all which would merit a new trial. Because if they don't, and if they don't have 16 any applicability, then there's -- the motion 17should be denied. But if they do have 18 applicability, and I'm trying to determine 19 exactly what that applicability is, that the 20 doctor has previously testified that they're 21 not applicable, that goes to that issue. 22 23 THE COURT: I think those are fair questions, and you can explain what you 24

2-205 1 assume or don't. 2 THE WITNESS: Right. 3 THE COURT: And answer. 4 THE WITNESS: Okay. I'm going to answer your -- I'm going to tell 5 Α. you -- I'm going to answer this question as 6 to why I think these studies are applicable 7 8 to this case. I think these studies are applicable 9 to this case because in this case you have a 10 pattern where children first denied that 11 12 abuse went on. And then you have a series of 13 widespread suggestive interviews by a number of different professional and 14 nonprofessionals. And these professionals 15 used a number of techniques that we have 16 learned through our science can come to make 17 children make false reports. And it was as a 18 result of these -- I'm not saying as a result 19 -- associated with these interviews, children 20 came to make reports of abuse that they had 21 2.2 previously denied. 23 Now, there are two hypotheses. One

hypothesis is that the children were scared;

that they didn't want to tell and you had to use everything you could to ferret out the truth, and you did it.

But the other hypothesis, which is born out by the science, is that there are times where that -- nothing happened to the children, that they correctly denied, and it was only when these aggressive, suggestive techniques were used that the allegations began to come out. And when you look at the allegations, also, the science can tell us something about what they mean about what happens when you get bizarre allegations; what happens if you get allegations that grow; what happens if allegations look truthful; if the children look credible, what kinds of judgments can you make about that.

In all those ways, the science that I've talked about is particularly applicable to this case, but I wouldn't call it applicable to children who have been sexually abused, but to children who have made allegations of sexual abuse, rather -- I mean, whether rightfully or wrongfully. So I

10/97D

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

think that's why I was a little confused before when you asked the question because I thought you were talking about children where we really knew that the abuse had gone on and they had in fact quickly made statements. And I just couldn't understand how come my research could be used other than to say: Well, when kids spontaneously make statements to neutral interviewers then one could have a lot of faith in that. But unfortunately, I've never been used by the prosecution to help them make those kinds of statements.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

22

23

24

But in terms of your question, I mean, the research I've stated is crucial to understanding one of the major hypotheses or alternative explanations for what happened in this case.

You talked a little bit there about bizarre 18 Q. allegations, and earlier you stated how very 19 often when you get bizarre allegations that's 20 a function of, I believe counsel said, sort 21 of the sky is the limit; anything you say, the story gets more and more fantastic? Α. Yes.

2 - 207

		2 - 2 0 8
1	. Q.	There are some pretty bizarre allegations in
2		that Country Walk case
3	A.	Yes.
4	Q.	aren't there, about riding on sharks?
5	A.	Riding on sharks I think was Edenton. But it
6		may be Country Walk also.
7	Q.	And, again, that Country Walk case is the one
8		where the codefendant corroborated much of
9		what the children said?
10	A.	Well, you and I there's certainly a great
11		deal of opinion on Country Walk
12	Q.	And your opinion
13	A.	of whether those allegations are true or
14		false.
15	Q.	And your opinion, clearly, is that there is
16		some problems with that?
17	Α.	I think there are tremendous issues in
18		Country Walk.
19	Q.	You've talked in the past about how the
20		laboratory's a sanitized environment, and in
21		fact stated that when kids come into the
22		laboratory they know that their lives aren't
23		at stake; they know that if they do something
24	4	bad that their mommies are still going to

FORM LASE! JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1- 631-6989

 \bigcirc

10/97D

2

2 - 209love them, and they're still going to go to 1 school, and so on, and that's how those 2 laboratory studies are carried out? 3 Did I write that? 4 Α. You testified to that. Does that sound 5 Q. 6 familiar to you? 7 Α. No. Do you agree with that, or is it something 8 Q. 9 you don't agree with? 10 Α. No. I think -- I agree. Would you agree that there's a great 11 Q. controversy still today about the ecological 12 validity of any of these research studies as 13 it would apply to an understanding of what 14 15 would happen in a child abuse situation, and actual real-life interviews, would you agree 16 with that, that there's a controversy? 17 I think the controversy concerns the --18 Α. using one study to understand one whole case. 19 20 Would you agree with --Ο. I don't think that there's a controversy --21 Α. well, there is a controversy, but it's 22 certainly among -- a majority of cognitive 23 and developmental psychologists and 24

scientists in general, there is an understanding of how science works. And the understanding is that it is not one study that builds a case; that it is a compilation of studies that yield consistent findings; studies that draw a consistent picture that helps you understand certain parameters of a case.

9 And in fact, there is -- there are people on Q. 10 one side of it saying that there's 11 controversy about using one study or all of 12 these studies, and there are people on the 13 side that you're sitting on which states that 14 this body of research should in fact be 15 applied to these situations, correct? There 16 are people on either sides of the fence? Well, I'm not quite sure who the people are 17 Α. on the other side of the fence who would 18 19 really argue that these kinds of studies don't apply, and in fact, inform cases such 20 21 as this one here.

Q. Would you agree with the statement by Dr.
Ceci in which he says, "In fact, most studies
that purport to say something about the

2-210

ころう

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

2-211 suggestibility of children's recollections of 1 2 sexual abuse events have omitted all consideration of the strong motives, threats 3 and inducements that are often part of the 4 aftermath of abuse. Any one of these 5 motivational forces can be used to reverse 6 7 the findings that have been reported in the literature." Would you agree with that 8 9 statement of his? Well, I think we wrote that statement 10 Α. together actually. 11 12 Ο. Do you agree with that? 13 Α. Yes, I do. Now, just to clarify for a moment, there's 14 Q. 15 testimony earlier today about these 16 videotapes. You're aware that the videotape 17 of J B**alance** was played in full to the jury that convicted this defendant, are you 18 19 not? That was my understanding yesterday, yes. 20 Α. Is it your understanding today, too? 21 Ο. Well, I'm glad you confirmed it for me. Yes. 22 Α. And in fact, also the videotape of J 23 Ο. , that videotape was played in full 24

FORM LASER C... (D A 😧 PENGAD • 1-800 JJ - 6989

		2-212
1		before the jury that convicted this
2		defendant?
3	Α.	I didn't know that.
4	Q.	And if I would reference you to the testimony
5		in this defendant's trial, Volume V, pages
6	- 	133 and 134, in which it states that the
7		video of Early O generation was in fact played
8		directly after B arro L and 's testimony.
9	A.	Okay.
10	Q.	So that you would agree, would you not, that
11		the jury who convicted this defendant had the
12		opportunity to see, as we did, J
13		B uilded 's testimony through the interview
14		with Susan Kelley; and the testimony of
15		June 0 through the testimony of
16		through the videotape of Susan Kelley, and
17		that in fact both Jack B B and Jack B
18		Output also testified in person in addition
19		to their videotaped interviews, would you
20		not?
21	Α.	I I it happened. You said it happened.
22		I agree it happened.
23		MS. ROONEY: I have no further
24		questions.

2

FUHM LASEH E 1/1 A 😈 PENGAD + 1-807 1-6989

 \bigcirc

		2 - 2 1 3
1		THE COURT: Redirect?
2		
3	REDI	RECT EXAMINATION
4	<u>by m</u>	R. WILLIAMS:
5	Q.	Well, Dr. Bruck, let's talk about the facts
6		of the case. You've been questioned about it
7		on cross ² examination. You were asked about
8		J 0 0 0 and about J 0 0 0 s
9		mother, about when she began questioning her
10		child. Do you recall that? It was one of the
11	i	very first questions you were asked.
12	Α.	Yes.
13	Q.	Now, do you recall seeing in the transcript,
14		Volume V, page 15, testimony that the mother
15		of Jackie Osgood
16		THE COURT: Volume V from the trial?
17		MR. WILLIAMS: Trial.
18		THE COURT: Okay.
19	Q.	That the mother questioned her child the day
20		after the parents' meeting?
21	A.	It was in the notes that I reviewed, yes.
22	Q.	Now, B rand L and , do you recall reading from
23		the trial transcript, June 4th, 1987, page
24		44, where the police came to the house and

· · ·-

10/97D

FORML

2 - 214the police instructed the mother to question 1 2 her son about a magic room and clowns, and she said that she did so on the very same 3 4 day? That was in the materials that I reviewed. 5 Α. Since we're on Billy Leary, let's talk about 6 Q. 7 his behavioral symptoms. I want to refer to 8 your affidavit. I believe it's on page 66, just to refresh your recollection. 9 10 What does the record indicate about the evidence of his behavioral symptoms as 11 12 you report it in your affidavit? 13 In my affidavit I have that: "On October Α. 14 11th, 1984, Barry Lands mother reported to 15 DSS worker, Karen Gaughan, that B was 16 asymptomatic." 17 The mother reported that B Q. was 18 asymptomatic? 19 Α. Yes. 20 Okay. And what else? Q. Then "four months later she reported to the 21 Α. police-DSS that 'during his tenure at . 22 school there were many clinical indicators of 23 abuse which became evident in hindsight.' " 24

FORM LASER 6UND A 🚯 PENGAD+ 1-800-U31-6989

10/97D

FORM

2 - 215Okay. And when was that, on February 1st, 1 Q. 2 1985? 3 Α. Yes. 4 Q. Okay. • 5 And then I have, "At trial, she testified Α. about inappropriate sexual behaviors ... that 6 began late in January or early February '85." 7 And then, I also have that "none of 8 this information was related to Susan Kelley 9 who gave" her "questionnaire to fill out on 10 11 February 15th, 1985." 12 THE COURT: May I ask --13 THE WITNESS: Yes. 14 THE COURT: -- just for my own clarification, when was the interview with 15 16 Billy by Susan Kelley? 17 THE WITNESS: That was --18 MR. WILLIAMS: February 15th. 19 THE COURT: 1985? 20 MR. WILLIAMS: Of '85. 21 THE WITNESS: Yes. 22 [By Mr. Williams:] All right. Let me just do a little time line 23 Ο. Left for a moment on the behavioral 24 on B

FORM LASER | VD A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

ſ

2 - 216symptoms since it was raised on cross-1 examination. 2 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, I would 3 object to this. If we're going to have a 4 chart, I believe the witness should be the 5 person rather than counsel --6 MR. WILLIAMS: No, I'm just going to 7 write down what she's saying, that's all. 8 THE COURT: Overruled. 9 MR. WILLIAMS: If she's got better 10 handwriting than I do --11 THE COURT: Overruled. You may have 12 it. 13 Okay. October 11th, she tells Karen Gaughan 14 Α. that he's asymptomatic. 15 Okay. So there's a report by the mother that 16 Q. 17 B sold's asymptomatic (writing on chalk). 18 Okay. It's February 1, '85 --19 Α. Right. 20 Q. This is right before his interview with the 21 Α. police. She reported that there were many 22 clinical indicators of abuse which became 23 evident in hindsight. 24

PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989 Θ FORM LASER BOND A

2 - 2171 Q. Okay. So there's the hindsight behavioral 2 symptoms (writing on chalk)? Yes. And then at trial, again she's 3 Α. 4 consistent with this where she says -- No. She testifies that her son began in late 5 January or early February '85 to show 6 behaviors. 7 Okay. So at trial she says that --Q. 8 They began. She testified about inappropriate Α. 9 sexual behaviors of her son that began --10 That began in --11 Q. In late January '85, or February. 12 Α. 13 Q. Okay. 14 Now, okay. At February 15th --Α. 15 Q. Right. 16 Α. -- there's -- none of this information is 17 related to Susan Kelley. And Susan Kelley asked for this information? 18 Q. There was a questionnaire that was given to 19 Α. the children. 20 So we'll put down "no symptoms 21 Q. Okay. 22 recorded in questionnaire" (writing on 23 chalk). Now, I want you to turn your 24

(10/97D

,1-6989

PENGAD · 1-80C

Θ

A U.

FORM LASER B

		2 - 218
1	·•	attention to the affidavit to A-171 of the
2		exhibits.
3	A.	Okay. Wait a minute.
4		THE COURT: This is Exhibit 2A?
5		MR. WILLIAMS: 2A, that's right.
6		THE WITNESS: Yes.
7	Α.	Oh, I'm sorry.
8	Q.	A, A-171. Tab number 4.
9	Α.	Okay. Here she
10	Q.	Okay. Now, what's the date of this
11		questionnaire?
12	Α.	This is how do they go January is the
13		first date of the month? We do it different
14		in Canada.
15	Q.	January 6th, right?
16	Α.	January 6, '86.
17	Q.	1/6/86.
18	Α.	Okay.
19	Q.	Long after the interview with Susan Kelley?
20	Α.	That's right.
21	Q.	Now, let's look at the next page where the
22		mother is indicating the behavior of the
23	8	child. What did the mother say about nail-
24		biting?

10/97D

.

FORM LASER BULLUA 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800-11-8989

 \bigcirc

1	A.	No.
2	Q.	Thumb-sucking?
3	Α.	No.
4	Q.	Jealousy?
5	A.	No.
6	Q.	Won't mind?
7	A.	No.
8	Q.	Won't no. Bed wetting?
9	Α.	No.
10	Q.	Breath holding?
11	A.	No.
12	Q.	Bad temper?
13	A.	No.
14	Q.	Hyperactivity?
15	A.	Yes. Can't sit still.
16	Q.	Stealing?
17	A.	No.
18	Q.	Fire setting?
19	A.	No.
20	Q.	Irritability?
21	A.	Yes.
22	Q.	Nightmares?
23	A.	Yes.
24	Q.	Speech problems?

÷

10/97D

FORM LASER B D.A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800 (-6989

 \bigcirc

2-219

		2 - 2 2 0
1	Α.	No.
2	Q.	Running away?
3	A.	No.
4	Q.	What's there for aggressiveness?
5	A.	(No verbal response.)
6	Q.	On the very bottom
7	A.	Nothing.
8	Q.	Now, what did the mother say about B
9		behavioral problem with respect to lying?
10	A.	Well she says, "lying," and she goes, "Yes."
11		And then
12	Q.	Wait. Hold on.
13	A.	Sorry.
14	Q.	So she marks off in January of 1986, she says
15		one of the problems with her child is that he
16		lies?
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	And then it's after just - list or describe
19		in more detail his problems?
20	A.	Yes.
21	Q.	What is important enough that she writes
22		down?
23	A.	The first is, "Stays in room."
24	Q.	Right.

FORM LASER B . D A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80. ...1-6989

CURIOL

 \bigcirc

		2-221
1	Α.	Three, "Keeps to self." Four, "Makes up
2		unbelievable stories."
3	Q.	Actually, three
4	A.	Sorry.
5	Q.	"One, stays in the room; two, keeps to
6		himself; three"
7	A.	"Makes up unbelievable stories."
8	Q.	"Makes up unbelievable stories." And then
9		fourth?
10	A.	"Spaces out a lot. Doesn't hear what you're,"
11		I guess, saying.
12	Q.	Okay. So the mother, in 1986, finds it
13	- - -	important enough to say that her son is
14		lying, makes up unbelievable stories, but no
15		sexualized behavior in this report, is that
16		right?
17	A.	No.
18	Q.	Now, what about in do you recall in mid-
19		1985 that the mother reported that B
20		L ange had no preoccupation with sexual acts
21		or sexual play inappropriate for his
22		behavior?
23	A.	In mid-'85?
24	Q.	In mid-1985?

10/97D

	- -	2 - 2 2 2
1	_ A.	In my that's with the Susan Kelley
2		interview.
3	Q.	Now, let's talk about the mother of M
4		T TT ; again, referencing the cross-
5		examination on the behaviors and the
6		questioning by the mother.
7		You're told you were asked on
8		cross-examination whether you knew that D
9		T TE , the mother, left the parents' meeting
10		early. Do you recall that?
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	When you were preparing your affidavit here,
13		were you aware that D anse T he questioned
14		Ministry The day after Labor Day, even
15		before the parents' meeting?
16	A.	I didn't know if it was the day after Labor
17		Day, but I have a cite that it's 9/8. So
18		maybe Labor Day was the 7th.
19	Q.	Okay. And what did M anager T ran say when she
20		was questioned by her mother even before the
21		parents' meeting?
22	A.	"Mother states she is happy about school and
23		nothing weird happened."
24	Q	Now, let's go to Jack Barrier s mother.

;

10/97D

FORM LASER BUND A (1) PENGAD • 1-800-431-6989

2 - 223Do you recall reading in the record there 1 that her mother saw on the news in September 2 of 1984 that there had been an arrest in this 3 4 case? 5 Α. Wait a minute. I'm sorry. J 6. Q. Right. 7 Α. Okay. s mother saw that there was an 8 Ο. That J arrest in this case and she then contacted 9 the police and that the police gave her 10 instructions or a list of questions to ask, 11 and that she proceeded to ask them. Do you 12 remember seeing that in the record? 13 Yes. I have, "Mother on -- in September '84, 14 Α. mother calls a detective who instructs her to 15 question J B B B about sexual abuse, 16 possibly by a clown, taking place in a magic 17 18 room or a secret room." Okay. Now, you were asked about the medical 19 Q. conditions of the children. Do you recall 20 what the record reflects about M 21 T**urner**s pediatric exam on the 13th of 22 23 September? 24 THE COURT: Of what year?

		2 - 2 2 4
1		MR. WILLIAMS: Of '84.
2	Α.	On September 13th, the mother takes Management
3		to pediatrician. The mother is not concerned
. 4		about sexual abuse, and there's no positive
5		findings in that examination.
6	Q.	Are you aware that Dr. Gauthrie (phonetic
7		spelling) testified about the medical
8		condition of M
9	A.	I read that, yes.
10	Q.	You did?
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	And that he found that her genitals were
13		normal?
14	A.	Yes.
15	Q.	And that her appetite was good, her bowel
16		movements were normal, and she had no other
17		symptoms?
18	A.	I read that testimony, yes.
19	Q.	And you said that the mother was not
20		concerned about sexual abuse?
21	A.	Yes, she was not concerned.
22	Q.	Since we're on M annature T ank , let me just
23		then go to her behavioral symptoms that you
24		were asked about.

10/3/10

FORM LASER { ID A 😨 PENGAD • 1-80. 31-6989

2 - 225Let's assume that the prosecution is 1 right, that the mother reported and testified 2 to sexualized behavior by her daughter 3 4 Let's just posit that for the M 5 moment. 6 Α. Yes. Okay. In conducting an unbiased interview or 7 Ο. an unbiased investigation into a child that's 8 exhibiting sexualized behavior, where the 9 possibility exists that it might -- the 10 perpetrators might be day-care workers. To do 11 an unbiased interview would you want to know 12 whether the mother believes that the father 13 14 had molested his own daughter? 15 Α. Yes. To rule out that possibility, isn't that 16 Q. 17 right? 18 Well, this child is showing sexualized Α. behavior and one has a suspicion that there's 19 sexual abuse, one wants to in fact cover the 20 waterfront of who it might be, yes. 21 And, now, are you aware, and were you aware 22 Q. when you prepared this affidavit, that the 23 mother of Mercenter filed a 51 for molestation 24

31-6989

PENGAD . 1-80

Θ

A O

FORM LASER [

2 - 2261 against the father? MS. ROONEY: Objection. Relevance. 2 3 THE COURT: Overruled. 4 MR. WILLIAMS: You went into the 5 behaviors. THE COURT: Well, the time period. 6 When was that 51A, if it was filed. 7 8 MR. WILLIAMS: The 51A was filed immediately after this trial was over. 9 10 MS. ROONEY: I move to strike with 11 respect to relevance. 12 THE COURT: Overruled. 13 [By Mr. Williams:] Would that, in terms of evaluating behavioral 14 Q. symptoms that you were asked about on cross-15 examination, would you want to look into --16 would that be a relevant factor to evaluate 17 18 behavioral symptoms? It would be incredibly relevant, not only for 19 Α. that, but in terms of the allegations she 20 made about the clown during her early 21 interviews with DSS and police, and a whole 22 set of -- a whole set of allegations. It 23 24 would be very helpful.

FORM LASER LUND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-8(J-6381-6989

10/97D

i

		2 - 2 2 7
1	Q.	And did you find any evidence in the record
2		that you reviewed that investigators pursued
3		that hypothesis, the mother's suspicion that
4		her own husband has been molesting her
5		daughter?
6	A.	I never saw that in the record.
7	Q.	Now, going back to January Barrow and the
8		medical condition of J
9		do you recall about her medical condition?
10		There was questioning
11	A.	J
12	Q.	Wait. Hold on. There was questioning of you
13		on cross-examination about vaginal pain?
14	Α.	Yes.
15	Q.	And there was testimony in this trial, you
16		may recall, about vaginal pain on the part of
17		J Charles D.
18	A.	Right.
19	Q.	What do you recall the records actually show
20		with respect to J
21	Α.	J an bad diabetes , and that there was a
22		urinary tract infection that caused vaginal
23		pain.
24	Q.	And wasn't that testimony from J
]	

 \bigcirc

2 - 228pediatrician that she had a history of 1 2 urinary tract infection? 3 Α. Yes. And that her pain in her vagina could be 4 Q. associated with that urinary tract infection? 5 Α. That's my memory, yes. 6 And that's the evidence of -- against -- for 7 Q. Jerry Brown of a physical nature, isn't 8 9 that right? 10 Α. That's right. 11 So with that --Q. 12 THE COURT: Let me just clarify. Do 13 you recall -- any of the counsel -- if the testimony about the urinary tract infection 14 15 by the pediatrician predated --16 MR. WILLIAMS: Yes. It predated 17 the --18 THE COURT: -- her attendance at Fells Acres, do you know? If you don't know, 19 20 that's fine. MR. WILLIAMS: I don't. I believe so, 21 but I don't want to state for certain. 22 23 [By Mr. Williams:] All right. So given all of these elements 24 Ο.

FORM LASER BC..... A 😧 PENGAD • 1-800-L., -6989

0/6/01

FOR

2 - 229that we went through, Michelle Tebo's father 1 2 being accused of molestation --MS. ROONEY: Objection. As to when? I 3 mean, I believe the testimony was it was 4 after the trial, so how does it have any 5 6 relevance? THE COURT: The only other issue is, I 7 think you've covered it, so rather than 8 9 recover it --10 MR. WILLIAMS: Okay. 11 [By Mr. Williams:] Now, are you saying, Dr. Bruck, and have you 12 Q. taken the position here in this hearing, that 13 there are absolutely no studies about 14 15 suggestibility before 1987 --16 Α. No. 17 Ο. -- is that your position? 18 Α. That is not my position. Okay. Just clarify briefly then what is your 19 Q. position if you're saying that there were no 20 studies of suggestibility, if you're saying 21 that that's not your position? 22 My position is that there was not an 23 Α. acceptable scientific record of the 24

21 A 🕲 PENGAD • 1-800 1-6989

suggestibility of young children who were questioned under the same kinds of conditions that prevailed in this case, and that there was not a systematic body of science upon which an expert could come into the courtroom and testify about.

Q. So you don't think --

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

,1-6989

PENGAD + 1-800

FORM LASER E D A 🔁

There were -- as I was examined on, there 8 Α. were some studies on three-year-olds, but 9 10 these studies did not involve repeated interviews about events after a long delay. 11 There wasn't a lot of pressure on the 12 13 children in these interviews to make statements one way or another. They miss many 14 15 of the very key qualities that are faint 16 mirrors of what went on in this case. Okay. In a follow-up to that, I want to quote 17 Q. you what's been marked as Exhibit 41, 18 submitted by the Commonwealth, page 239 of 19 that exhibit, which is a book, Memory, 20 Trauma, Treatment and the Law, page 239, 21 where they discuss Gail Goodman's work, 22 particularly the Simon Says Study, which you 23 were cross-examined on. And tell me if this 24

2 - 2 3 0

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

,1-6989

PENGAD 1-80

Θ

۷0

FORM LASER E

comports with your understanding.

These authors say, quote, "Over the next five years" -- that is, after the first 1986 study you were asked about -- "Goodman and her associates made a number of important modifications in the Simon Says procedure." Then he goes and he proceeds to describe those modifications.

Then at the bottom of the page, going into the next page, he says that those modifications were designed -- were done, quote, "In order to distinguish more carefully between the relative suggestive influence of different types of post-event information from peripheral to more central information." Again, what you were crossexamined on.

"A very important innovation since the 1986 Study was the inclusion of abuse questions. These suggestive questions were specifically created to address," quote, "actions that might lead to an accusation of child abuse, such as, he took off your clothes, didn't he? Or, did he kiss you?

2-231

2 - 232The questions were derived from ratings by 1 2 professionals as to the kinds of questions 3 likely to be asked in an abuse 4 investigation." So these modifications were of that 5 sort, does that comport with your 6 7 understanding? 8 Α. That's my memory of this, yes. And would you say that those modifications 9 Ο. which took place in the five years after 1986 10 were improvements on that original Simon Says 11 12 Study? 13 Α. Yes. 14 Okay. Now, let's go to the same exhibit by Q. 15 the Commonwealth. It's marked as 42. 16 THE COURT: Mr. Williams -- and I'm going to ask the same thing of Miss Rooney --17 because this is in evidence and it may be 18 easier and more efficient if you could, when 19 I give you all ample time to argue the motion 20 and the opposition to it, refer to these 21 rather than have her agreement to them. I 22 mean, I'll give you some leeway. You've just 23 done it with one study, but --24

PENGAD • 1-80. J1-6989

FORM LASER E. D.A 🚯

		2 - 2 3 3
1		THE WITNESS: Okay.
Ż		THE COURT: I'm also concerned
3		about the next witness.
4		MR. WILLIAMS: So long as the Court is
5		so the ground rules are clear, the fact
6		that I'm not referring to it in my
7		examination, I can still cite to it and quote
8		from it in my brief.
9		THE COURT: Especially when it's an
10		exhibit in evidence, absolutely.
11		MR. WILLIAMS: Terrific. I'll do
12		that.
13	[By	Mr. Williams:]
14	Q.	You were asked about misinformation studies,
15		do you recall that?
16	A.	Yes.
17	Q.	Are the misinformation studies before 1987
18		applicable to evaluating child sex abuse
19		cases?
20	A.	They there are very few of them involving
21		children and the ones that were available I
22		think share the same deficits that I've
23		talked about before. There were not many on
24		three-year-olds, the children were shown

0/6/01

2 - 234videotapes or slides, and they were asked 1 questions that really didn't involve 2 3 themselves. Okay. Now, you were -- for the same effect, 4 Q. you were asked questions about janitor -- the 5 janitor experiment, and the point was that 6 that did not involve anything about the 7 bodily integrity of the child? 8 9 Α. Right. And therefore, it may not be wholly 10 Q. 11 applicable here? 12 Α. Right. 13 Doctor, wasn't the pediatrician studies that 0. we saw and heard about yesterday to address 14 15 that very point? The Pediatrician Studies were one that did 16 Α. involve things that happened to the child and 17 whether or not one could move that child's 18 memory or report around about who did what, 19 20 yes. Now, let's quickly turn our attention to the 21 Q. defense experts, and you were questioned 22 about a variety of elements of their 23 testimony. Do you recall that? 24

2 - 2351 Α. Yes. 2 The defense experts in this case? Q. 3 Α. Right. Do you recall, in connection with any of that 4 Q. testimony, whether any studies were cited 5 which shows the actual impact on the child 6 7 when the child is subjected to these types of 8 interviewing techniques? 9 Α. I didn't see that. So what we have here in the record at the 10 Q. trial was simply -- what we have here in the 11 record is simply a -- a recounting of what we 12 see in the record rather than what the impact 13 14 was? 15 Α. Right. And isn't that what the science is 16 Q. addressing, not what we can all see. We all 17 know what a leading question is, but what 18 exactly is the impact of that question? 19 20 Α. Exactly. 21 Q. Or that set of questions? I mean, what happened was, these experts at 22 Α. these trials were very -- their intuititions 23 were right, but their intuitions were in 24

PENGAU - 1-80

()

2-236 search of some data to support them, and 1 those data simply weren't available. And a 2 lot -- some of the data that I talked about, 3 you know, eight years later, are now 4 available. But I mean --5 6 Q. Right. -- they were good hypothesis generators. 7 Α. And the fact that an expert can get on the 8 Q. stand and tell a jury: Well, what we see here 9 is peer pressure. What we see here are 10 11 suggestive questioning. What we see here is evoking the child to help, but without 12 telling the jury what exactly is the impact 13 of all of that, wouldn't you say it's 14 15 somewhat worthless? Well, it's worthless if they're supposed to 16 Α. be there as experts to present scientific 17 18 data, yes. Was there any studies to suggest -- to rebut 19 Ο. 20 the suggestion that children do not confabulate when it comes to matters about 21 22 their private parts? 23 No, there were none. Α. Now, you were asked about the anatomic doll 24 Q.

2 - 237studies, and you were -- your attention was 1 called to three of them. Do you recall that? 2 3 Α. Yes. And you wanted to explain what you felt was 4 Ο. 5 wrong about those? 6 Α. Right. Yes. 7 Q. Okay. Can you tell me --Well, there's -- I can't -- we could -- two 8 Α. of the studies were studies that were done 9 with children who in fact had experienced 10 some medical -- no. The Goodman Study was one 11 where children had experiences, very painful 12 medical procedure, and they were given the 13 dolls. And, as I remember reading the study a 14 few months ago, the dolls did result in more 15 16 accurate reports. 17 And that's always -- I mean, that's good. I mean, in Monkey-Thief we saw if you 18 use these suggestive techniques with children 19 about punishments that they didn't want to 20 talk about, what did it do? It got them to 21 talk about these punishments, right? 22 23 Ο. Right. So there are very beneficial effects to using 24 Α.

FORM LASER P. J. A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-800 _ 1-6989

Ć

2 - 238these techniques for children who don't want 1 2 to talk about real events. 3 What this Goodman -- newer Goodman Study I think is missing is a condition that 4 makes it interesting to this trial, which is, 5 6 what happens when you have children who 7 didn't experience an event and you give them the doll. Then is their reporting going to 8 remain silent or are they going to begin to 9 10 make false comments. 11 Now, the other study that was mentioned was Steward and Steward. And I 12 actually had to review that study very 13 carefully for a report I had to write on it. 14 And I summarize part of the findings in my 15 report here. And I wrote down the numbers so 16 17 I wouldn't waste everyone's time, but you'll 18 just have to wait a minute. 19 (Witness examines document.) What Steward and Steward found --20it's right here -- I said -- in fact, the 21 Steward and Steward Study is one that 22 includes older children. So we've done two 23 studies so far. We've done one on three-year-24

PENGAD 1-800

Ð

olds and one on four-year-olds. And now there's this one with Steward, children as old as six-years-old, these children were reporting events that happened to them in a medical clinic.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

And they were interviewed three times, and with each interview, children's false reports of anal touching increased. By the final interview, which took place six months after the initial interview, more than one-third of the children falsely reported anal touching.

So I think that the -- this study is one that really does raise -- raise some concerns. So I don't know if it's one that --I can't say it's inconsistent with our studies.

But each study is different, and you know, I can -- you can set studies up in ways where the events are neutral, where children aren't asked a lot of questions, where it's really, you know, drilled into them it's important to tell the truth. And in those settings, you're going to get very low rates,

2-239

2 - 240and you may find very beneficial effects of 1 using these kinds of dolls or props. 2 3 But if you set studies up in ways where children aren't given this information, 4 or they're repeatedly interviewed, or there's 5 some kind of implicit message: It's good to 6 touch these dolls. Show us what happened with 7 these dolls, you'll change the numbers 8 9 around. So it's very hard to talk about consistent and inconsistent studies. You have 10 to look very carefully at what the procedures 11 are and what the children are being asked to 12 13 do. Okay. Now, just quickly, and I don't want you 14 Q. 15 to belabor this point, but --16 THE COURT: Excuse me, but I'm 17 thinking about that. 18 But you were asked about the Mousetrap Study, Q. and I just want to make it clear so there's 19 no confusion later when we have to write 20 briefs on this, was there more than one 2122 Mousetrap Study? Well, there are two studies. We call them 23 Α. 24 Mousetrap Studies. Really, the first one is

1/8/01

PENGAU · 1- 531-6985

		2 - 241
1		the official Mousetrap Study.
2	Q.	The first one?
3	A.	Mm-hmm.
4	Q.	Now, yesterday when you were testifying
5		about, and we were talking about the
б		Mousetrap Study, what were you talking about?
7	A.	When I was talking about children's assent
8		rates increasing
9	Q.	Yes.
10	A.	I was talking about the second Mousetrap
11		Study, which is really the Bicycle Stitches
12		Study.
13	Q.	Okay. And when did that take place?
14	Α.	Oh, about six months after the first one.
15		There were two studies.
16	Q.	Okay. Was there an improvement on the second
17		one you talked about yesterday
18	Α.	Yes.
19	Q.	over the first one?
20	Α.	In the first study which I was just shown the
21		table for that's why I was a little
22		confused when I saw it we it was noted
23		in the study that when children were first
24		asked to think about: Did these things

ì

ייייר

 \bigcirc

happen, you get fairly high assent rates for false events. And these don't change over time. It looks in the table as though there's a drop, but it's not statistically significant. So there's very little change.

In the study, that I testified about yesterday, we changed the procedure somewhat where children were now told to think about events that had happened, and they were given a few more props to use, what we call memory and visualization techniques, to think about things that might have happened.

And when you use those procedures, you do get changes in children's assents over time. But as the prosecutor pointed out, and I mean, we make these very clear in our brief and in other things we've written, in this very mild procedure it is true that it's much easier to get rises for true -- for positive assents, such as, going up in a hot-air balloon, compared to getting, you know, falling off and hurting yourself. And that's why we did -- then went to Monkey-Thief, to look at this under more coercive situations.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

2 - 242

		2 - 2 4 3
1		So I just wanted to clarify that.
2	Q.	Okay. You were asked some questions about
3		behavioral syndromes. I know you addressed it
4		in the affidavit. I want to show you the
5		an exhibit marked by the Commonwealth,
6		Exhibit 44, and I'm not going to ask you to
7		belabor that one either. I just want you I
8	÷	just want to know whether the authors of that
9		particular exhibit, Exhibit 44 offered by the
10		Commonwealth, are telling us that there is a
11		set or definable set of behavioral symptoms
12		that tell us that a child has been abused?
13	A.	No. In this abstract and there's a
14		subsequent paper that was written by Lucy
15		Berliner (phonetic spelling) that mirror this
16		that says, "No one symptom characterized a
17		majority of sexually abused children."
18	Q.	Now, you were asked about studies by Snow and
19		Sorenson, do you recall that?
20	A.	Yes.
21	Q.	Do you like those studies?
22	A.	Like?
23	Q.	Or do you have a problem with them?
24	Α.	No, I don't know if that's the right word to

D'ANI

FORM LASER 1 JD A (D) PENGAD • 1-80 31-6989

 \bigcirc

2 - 244use for a scientist. I think there's enormous 1 problems with the Snow and Sorenson Study. 2 Just give us a brief evaluation of that? 3 Q. Okay. I'll quickly go through this. The first 4 Α. problem is that it appeared in a journal 5 that's not a very good peer review journal. 6 It's a social work journal. And the 7 procedures are so poorly outlined that when 8 we sent them to experts or people who are 9 editors of other journals to ask them what 10 they thought, they said -- you know, they 11 would never -- they just really had no idea 12 13 what the procedures were, which is really very important. And as the prosecutor 14 questioned me about the Wood Study, I mean, 15 with every study, you do have problems. You 16 want to know what the case sample is, and how 17 18 you selected them and so on. But with this study, you know less. 19 It's just unclear. They said there were 630 20 cases and they selected 116; and you don't 21

really know why - why these were selected.

But the larger concern with this, and it arises really uncommonly in science,

31-6961 I LUGAD Э

22

23

24

2 - 245is that there's concerns about the bias of 1 2 one of the interview -- of one of the authors, who in two parts of our book we cite 3 transcripts from trials where it's clear that 4 Dr. Snow was a therapist who treated sexually 5 -- or children who were allegedly sexually 6 abused, and had the belief that no matter 7 what children said, they were abused. 8 9 And I have the passages in our book 10 that you can look at this, but one of the Supreme Court Justices in Utah really came 11 12 down very hard on her in this. 13 Now, the problem in terms of the science is the following: That the cases that 14 they were dealing with were her cases, and if 15 she was one who evaluated children and 16 17 believed that everything a child said was symptomatic of sexual abuse, and she's using 18 these cases in her studies, then maybe this 19 high rate of recantation, or this high rate 20 of denial, is symptomatic of kids who are not 21 sexually abused. And we simply don't know. 22 And this is why it's a very very problematic 23 24 study.

2 - 246And as was mentioned, until a few 1 2 years ago, it really was very highly cited because it was the only one that was 3 4 available. 5 The Bradley and Wood one is available now; as is pointed out, there are 6 probably -- there are certainly problems with 7 these studies. And hopefully, people will do 8 more and more, getting better databases, and 9 we'll have a fairer picture of what's going 10 on. But, you know, we have to go by the best 11 12 light available. 13 Q. Okay. 14 THE COURT: Mr. Williams, I'm going 15 to ask you to --MR. WILLIAMS: Three more questions. 16 17 [By Mr. Williams:] Now, do you agree, Dr. Bruck, that children 18 Q. cannot be easily led -- and I want to 19 underscore that phrase -- easily led to make 20 allegations of sexual abuse? 21 In the -- on the average, I would agree with 22 Α. that. I think that there are always a few 23 children that if you look at them cross-eyed, 24

VD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-8: 31-6989

1/8/1

FORM LASER

.

2 - 247they're going to say whatever you want. But I 1 also think that if you ask -- if you have an 2 interview where there are a couple of 3 misleading questions, this is not -- should 4 not have a significant effect on children's 5 testimony. We've seen this in a number of the 6 studies that we've reviewed. In the Garven 7 and Wood one, which was the McMartin Study, 8 they had leading questions there. In Gail 9 Goodman's studies where these questions are 10 asked by neutral interviewers, where they're 11 peppered along a lot of other kinds of 12 13 questions, it's not common for children to 14 falsely make allegations in these more 15 neutral-kinds of situations. So just asking leading questions by 16 themselves is not going to do it all the 17 time, but there are always some kids who are 18 going to say yes no matter what. 19 In fact, it's safe to say, in looking at the 20 Ο. Susan Kelley tapes that we did, that J 21 22 were quite resilient? and J Yes. We had very resistant children, yes. 23 Α. And that doesn't conflict with your research 24 Q.

10/97D

{

2 - 2481 or your position? 2 Α. No. Last question. You were asked about other 3 Q. day-care center cases and the facts of those. 4 Did you find in other day-care center cases, 5 6 like the McMartin case, where there were 7 allegations of animal sacrifices? I'm not as familiar with McMartin. Edenton, 8 Α. 9 there were sacrifices. 10 Ο. Animal sacrifice? 11 Α. Yes. And --And what about just bizarre allegations 12 Q. 13 generally? And bizarre allegations generally. 14 Α. 15 MR. WILLIAMS: I have no further 16 questions. 17 MS. ROONEY: No. I have nothing 18 further. 19 THE COURT: You may step down. 20 THE WITNESS: Thank you. Nice meeting 21 you. 22 (Witness excused.) MS. ROONEY: I have a few motions to 23 strike portions of her testimony that I could 24

10 10

FORM LASER ND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-81 -331-6985

. .

2 - 249either put on the record now or later, just 1 2 to protect the record. THE COURT: I'll save your rights on 3 4 that. 5 MS. ROONEY: Well, I think I have to 6 say what they are in order to have my rights 7 saved, otherwise --8 THE COURT: Okay. MS. ROONEY: Just essentially, I 9 believe yesterday Dr. Bruck made a statement 10 11 about the unreliability of the child's reports. I would move to strike that, given 12 she's an expert, she should not be commenting 13 14on the credibility of the child. 15 She also testified --THE COURT: Well, I'll say this, 16 without telling you everything I want to say 17 about your objection to that, but at the very 18 least, what I want to say is, if we were in 19 front of a jury, I would agree with you 20 without any reservation. But for purposes of 21 this hearing, I'm going to overrule that 22 objection. 23 24 MS. ROONEY: Also, again, yesterday I

2 - 250believe it was, she testified with respect to 1 the police officers and statements in the 2 police officers reports, as well as the 3 4 Department of Social Services reports, she indicated that that information was incorrect 5 or inconsistent. And again, on the same 6 7 grounds, it was commenting on another 8 witness. THE COURT: An opinion about that, I 9 would agree is not for this witness even at 10 11 this hearing. 12 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, the 13 Commonwealth would renew its motion at this 14 time to strike the information contained in her affidavit with respect to the six 15 children who did not testify in the case 16 against this defendant. I believe we've made 17 18 that motion before. Okay. I'm going to deny 19 THE COURT: that request without prejudice. What I would 20 like for you to do -- not now -- is maybe put 21 on paper for me which of those sections of 22 the affidavit you're referring to, and then 23 I'll give you time to argue before I --24

10/97

FORM LASER E. 4D A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-80, 31-6983

ſ

MS. ROONEY: And finally, your Honor, 1 Dr. Bruck testified, yesterday I believe, to 2 3 a 1998 study that she had conducted. I don't know if it had a name. It had something to do 4 5 about the adults and the interviewer bias of adults. I believe it had to do with children 6 7 being at a birthday party or not being at a 8 birthday party. I would move to strike her 9 testimony with respect to that study. It is not in fact, in her words, written up yet. It 10 obviously hasn't been subjected to peer 11 review. We have no -- there's no information 12about it in the record. She was unable to 13 provide any, and I would just move to strike 14 15 that based on those grounds. THE COURT: What about that issue? 16 If it hasn't been provided to the Commonwealth, 17 if it's not been published, they don't have 18 access to it and can't question her on it? 19 20 MR. WILLIAMS: No, your Honor, then what they're really saying is that we can't 21 present the most recent state-of-the-art 22

studies that are being conducted in this

area. It's so new that she's in the midst of

24

23

говытазен в 🔉 л 🚯 Рендав-

1-6985

1-800

2-251

writing it up.

1

2	I think what it goes to is the
3	weight. The fact that it's not peer reviewed,
4	you could at this juncture, I think
5	ultimately it will be but you can consider
6	that for the weight of that evidence.
7	THE COURT: I'll note your objection.
8	I'm going to overrule it at this time. Any
9	others?
10	MS. ROONEY: That's it, your Honor.
11	THE COURT: Okay. Your next witness?
12	MR. SULTAN: Yes, your Honor. The
13	defendant calls Dr. Schetky, please.
14	
15	DR. DIANE H. SCHETKY, SWORN
16	
17	THE CLERK: Please state your name
18	and spell your last name for the record?
19	THE WITNESS: Yes. Diane H. Schetky.
20	That's spelled S-c-h-e-t-k-y.
21	
22	DIRECT EXAMINATION
23	BY MR. SULTAN:
24	Q. Good afternoon, ma'am. Where do you live?

 \bigcirc

10/97D

2-253 1 Α. Rockport, Maine. And how -- what is your profession? 2 Q. 3 Α. I'm a child and adult psychiatrist. Now, before you were on the witness stand, 4 Q. there's an exhibit that's been marked, 5 Exhibit 25, can you tell the Court what that 6 7 is, please? That is my most recent curriculum vitae. 8 Α. And is that an accurate statement of your 9 Q. professional experience and training? 10 11 It is. Α. 12 Are you board certified, Dr. Schetky? Ο. 13 Α. I am. And in what specialties are you board 14 Q. 15 certified? Adult psychiatry, child psychiatry, and 16 Α. 17 forensic psychiatry. 18 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, the Commonwealth is happy to stipulate to the 19 20 C.V. 21 MR. SULTAN: I'm not going to go through her credentials, your Honor. The 22 Court has her C.V. obviously in evidence. 23 24

01210

FORM LASER / JU A 😧 PENGAD • 1-80

31-6969

		2 - 2 5 4
1	. [Ву	Mr. Sultan:]
2	Q.	Could you just generically describe the
3		nature of your present professional practice,
4		Dr. Schetky?
5	A.	I'm in private-solo practice in Rockport,
6		Maine. Currently about 50 percent of my
7	-	practice is doing forensic evaluations. I'd
8		say the bulk of these I'm appointed by the
9		Court. I've also done some defense work,
10		quite a bit of plaintiff work in civil
11		litigation, many in cases involving sexual
12		abuse of the children and adults
13		THE COURT: This is where in the
14		civil cases, where a plaintiff alleges that
15		he or she was sexually abused and is claiming
16		damages?
17		THE WITNESS: Correct.
18	A.	In addition, I'm involved in teaching at
19		Maine Medical Center, where I teach a seminar
20		that's led jointly for law students at
21		University of Maine and the child psychiatry
22		trainees at Maine Medical Center. And I'm
23		involved in quite a bit of writing and
24		lecturing around the country.

FORM LASER ND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-81 _31-6989

10/97D

)

;

		2 - 2 5 5
1	Q.	Have you been qualified as an expert witness
2		in any courts before?
3	A.	I have.
4	Q.	And tell us the states in which you've been
5		qualified, or some of the states in which
6		you've been so qualified?
7	Α.	Oregon, Washington, Florida, Louisiana,
8		Pennsylvania, Illinois and, let me think,
9		Massachusetts, Connecticut, Maine and
10	Q.	Dr. Schetky, in the course
11	A.	New Hampshire.
12	Q.	are you done?
13	A.	And New Hampshire.
14	Q.	And New Hampshire.
15		In the course of your professional career,
16		have you developed have you become
17		familiar with the the subfield of young
18		children's memories, including how they work
19		and how they can be manipulated?
20	A.	Yes.
21	Q.	And what are the sources or your familiarity
22		with that particular subfield?
23	Α.	Reading in the literature, continuing
24		education courses at annual meetings and

		2 - 2 5 6
1		seminars, my own experience in interviewing
2		many many young children over the years.
3	Q.	Over what period of time have you done
4		clinical work?
5	A.	I've been engaged in the field of sexual
6	• •	abuse since 1975 and seeing children in many
7		contexts albeit in dependency and neglect
8		hearings, allegations of sexual abuse that
9		arise in the context of custody and divorce
10		disputes, as well as sexually abused children
11		I have treated over the years.
12	Q.	Have you written in this field?
13	A.	I have.
14	Q.	Have you lectured in this field?
15	A.	I have.
16	Q.	Are you familiar do you have a working
17		knowledge of the literature in this field?
18	A.	Yes. I wouldn't say it's as detailed as Dr.
19		Bruck however.
20	Q.	Okay. Are you familiar with the generally
21		accepted views within the community of child
22		psychiatrists
23	A.	Yes.
24	Q.	in this field?

ء,

10/97D

ેં

)

3

		2 - 2 5 7
1		Have you also, in the course of your
2		professional career, developed a familiarity
3		with various techniques of interviewing
4		preschool children, and in particular, the
5		relationship between such techniques and the
6		reliability of information provided by such
7		children?
8	A.	Yes.
9	Q.	And the sources of your familiarity with that
10		subfield, essentially the same as those you
11		already testified to?
12	A.	In addition, over the years I have critiqued
13		many evaluations of so-called validators,
14		other people who have assessed children for
15		sexual abuse.
16	Q.	Have you had any role in drafting any
17		protocols or guidelines for how young
18		children should be interviewed in cases
19		involving allegations of child abuse?
20	Α.	Yes. In 1988, the American Academy of Child
21		and Adolescent Psychiatry put forth
22		guidelines for evaluating children alleging
23		sexual abuse.
24	Q.	What is the American Academy of Child and

0197D

FORM LASER BOND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-800-631-6989

		2 - 2 5 8
1		Adolescent Psychiatry?
2	A.	It's a national organization of child
3		psychiatrists. I think there are about six
4		thousand of us in the organization now.
5	Q.	These guidelines that were published in 1988,
6		are they before you and marked Exhibit 21?
7	A.	Yes.
8	Q.	And what role did you have in the preparation
9		of those guidelines?
10	A.	I was Chair of the committee that wrote the
11		guidelines, and the principal author of them.
12	Q.	Subsequent to the publication of those
13		guidelines by the American Academy of Child
14		and Adolescent Psychiatry in 1988, have you
15		had any further role in drafting or reviewing
16		guidelines in this area?
17	Α.	Yes. The Academy is now coming out with
18		practice parameters affecting many areas of
19		our practice. These are much more detailed,
20		referenced guidelines for practitioners.
21	Q.	Have such parameters been published by the
22		American Academy of Child and Adolescent
23		Psychiatry in this particular area, that is,
24		interviewing young children in cases
Į		

.

٦

;

	2 - 2 5 9
	involving allegations of sexual abuse?
A.	Yes. In 1977.
Q.	What's the year again?
A.	1977, October. I'm sorry. 1997. October.
Q.	1997, okay.
	And are those marked Exhibit 24?
A.	Yes.
Q.	What role, if any, did you have in with
	respect to those 1997 practice parameters?
A.	I critiqued several drafts of it. I was not
	one of the primary authors.
Q.	Now, Dr. Schetky, have you read the trial
	transcript in this case, or read the
	investigative reports, or read anything else
	about this case other than what's been
	presented in the courtroom yesterday and
	today?
A.	I have not.
Q.	Did you, in the course of your preparation
	for appearing at this hearing, review the
	affidavit of Dr. Bruck, which has been marked
	Exhibit 1?
A.	I did.
	Do you know, or at least prior to yesterday
	A. Q. A. Q. A. Q. A. Q.

10/97D

г. У

FORM LASE: JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1+...-631-6989

		2 ~ 2 6 0
1		when this hearing began, did you know Dr.
2		Bruck personally?
3	Α.	No. Only by name.
4	Q.	Had you ever met her before yesterday?
5	A.	I had not.
6	Q.	Have you read any of the articles or other
7		works that Dr. Bruck has authored or
8		coauthored?
9	A.	Yes.
10	Q.	Now, Dr. Bruck is a psychologist and you're a
11		psychiatrist, right?
12	A.	That's correct.
13	Q.	And can you just briefly describe the
14		significance, if any, of that distinction in
15		the professional world dealing with children?
16	A.	The two professions are often confused even
17		by lawyers. A Ph.D. is a post-doctoral
18		degree. It may be more research oriented or
19		it may be clinically oriented, but a Ph.D. in
20		Psychology does not have the medical training
21		a psychiatrist does.
22	Q.	And vice versa?
23	Α.	Correct. And what they do have that we do not
24		have, they are trained to administer and

10/97D

FORM LASE! JND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1- 631-6989

S. 2

2-261 interpret psychological testing, and they 1 probably receive more training in research 2 methodology than the average psychiatrist 3 4 does. 5 Our training is, first of all, medical -- four years of medical school 6 followed by four or five years of post-7 graduate clinical experience, which is 8 supervised. And in my case, I took an 9 additional two years in child psychiatry. 10 11 Q. Is there any cross-fertilization between 12 child psychiatrists and child psychologists, 13 or at least the works of psychiatrists and 14 psychologists? I think it varies around the country. 15 Α. Probably people in academia work in closer 16 quarters, so in very large departments, they 17 may have very little to do with each other, 18 19 large university centers. Unfortunately, we tend not to read 20 each other's literature much unless we're 21 writing a paper and trying to do a literature 22 23 review. With respect to -- I'm sorry. 24 Ο.

-631-6985

PENGAD • 1

UND A CO

-UHM LASE

2 - 262Unfortunately, we tend not to go to each 1 Α. other's meetings a lot because it is a 2 problem how much time you can take away from 3 your practice. It also becomes very 4 5 expensive. With respect to Dr. Bruck's works, that is 6 Q. 7 articles or other works she's written, you said you have read some of her works, though, 8 9 correct? 10 Α. Yes. Are you familiar with her reputation as a 11 Q. researcher and scholar within the -- within 12 your professional community, that is, the 13 community of child and adolescent 14 15 psychiatrists? 16 Α. I am. 17 And what is her reputation? Q. 18 MS. ROONEY: Objection. 19 THE COURT: Basis? 20 MS. ROONEY: I believe we're in the area of character evidence with respect to an 21 expert. I mean, she shouldn't -- my 22 understanding is that Dr. Schetky was merely 23 going to testify as to whether or not the 24

FORM LASE' JND A 😨 PENGAD • 1 • 631-6989

2 - 263research was generally accepted in the field, 1 and now we're commenting on Dr. Bruck's 2 3 stature in the community. 4 THE COURT: Well, I take that question to go to the limited purpose of Dr. 5 Bruck's research in the field, and whether 6 it's accepted; not accepted. Limited to that, 7 I think it's an appropriate question for a 8 9 Lanigan --10 MR. SULTAN: That's the only purpose 11 of the question. 12 THE COURT: I will not take it for purposes of any credibility judgments I make 13 about her testimony, or the weight of her 14 15 testimony. I will not take it --16 MS. ROONEY: Then perhaps the question can be rephrased so that we're 17 talking about the research studies rather 18 19 than Dr. Bruck herself. 20 MR. SULTAN: I'll do so. 21 [By Mr. Sultan:] With respect to the quality of Dr. Bruck's 22 Q. research and work in -- she has described 23 over the past couple of days, are you 24

631-6989

PENGAD · 1-

Θ

V DNC

FORM LASE!

		2 - 264
1		familiar with the reputation of that body of
2		work within your professional community?
3	A.	I can't speak for the entire profession
4		clearly, but among my colleagues who work in
5		the area of forensics and child sexual abuse,
6		her work is held in high regard. In fact, the
7		practice parameters put out in 1997 has an
8		extensive bibliography, and they have starred
9		several of the references with an asterisk
10		that are particularly recommended, and one of
11		those is her book, <u>Jeopardy in the Courtroom</u> .
12	Q.	And what is the significance of that asterisk
13		on the bibliography published by the American
14		Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry?
15	A.	To key the reader to what are considered to
16		be the most significant works, and perhaps
17		most useful. It's about a four-page
18		bibliography five page. Maybe only about
19		six works were starred.
20	Q.	And that's one of them?
21	Α.	Yes.
22	Q.	Dr. Schetky, I'd ask you to keep your voice
23		up.
24	Α.	Yes.
l		

10/97D

FORM LASEP. ND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-61 31-6989

ξ,

2 - 2651 Q. Thank you. Now, did you read the portion of Dr. Bruck's 2 affidavit regarding the effect of interviewer 3 bias upon the reliability of reports by young 4 children? I think that appears at paragraphs 5 41 and 46 of her affidavit. 6 7 Α. I did. And did you hear her testimony on that 8 0. subject in the courtroom over the past two 9 10 days? 11 Α. I did. In general, can you tell us whether you agree 12 Q. or disagree with her opinions on that 13 14 subject? 15 MS. ROONEY: Objection. 16 THE COURT: Basis? 17 MS. ROONEY: Again, we're commenting on Dr. Bruck's opinion. She testified as to 18 her opinions of the research. I don't believe 19 it's appropriate testimony for Dr. Schetky to 20 now comment on Dr. Bruck's opinions. 21 22 MR. SULTAN: I think as a -- I think in order to establish, under Lanigan, the 23 reliability, the validity and the general 24

0/6/01

PENGAD • 1-80% J1-6989

Θ

A Communication of A

acceptability of the testimony that's been put forth by Dr. Bruck, I think it's entirely appropriate to ask a qualified professional her views on those subjects, as well as her assessment, if she has one, as to the general acceptability of Dr. Bruck's views within her professional community.

I think that's what I have to do.

THE COURT: Well, she can testify to that, that is, I'll let her testify to that if you could rephrase the question.

MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, I believe that the Lanigan standard is that of the reliability of the theory or process underlying the expert's testimony. And I have not yet heard what theory or process we're talking about. And unless we can identify a particular theory or a particular process which they are proffering as meeting the Lanigan standard, I don't believe this testimony is appropriate.

THE COURT: Well, you can rephrase the question along those lines. Overruled.

2-266

1012101

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

		2 - 267
1	[Ву	Mr. Sultan:]
2	Q.	Dr. Schetky, with respect to the views
3		presented by Dr. Bruck over the past two days
4		regarding the effect of interview bias upon
5		the reliability of reports by young children,
6		is are those views, in your opinion,
7		generally accepted within the field of child
8		psychiatry today?
9	A.	Yes.
10	Q.	And are those views, to your knowledge,
11		supported by published peer review articles
12		in medical or scientific journals?
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	Now, with respect to Dr. Bruck's testimony
15		and what it sets forth in her affidavit
16		regarding the use of repetitive leading
17		questions and the impact of such questioning
18		upon the reliability of reports by young
19		children, did you read that portion of her
20		affidavit?
21	A.	I did.
22	Q.	And did you hear her testify in this
23		courtroom over the past two days regarding
24		that subject?
L		

10/97D

·

FORM LASER ND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-61 J31-6989

 $\dot{\mathbb{O}}$

		2 - 2 6 8
1	A.	I did.
2	Q.	Now, in your opinion, are the views that she
3		presented on that particular subject, are
4		those views generally accepted today within
5		the field of child psychiatry?
6		MS. ROONEY: Objection. I'm going to
7		object to this entire line of questioning,
8		and for purposes of the record
9		THE COURT: Overruled. You may
10		answer.
11	Α.	Yes, they are accepted.
12	Q.	And why don't you tell us your understanding
13		of what those views are, in summary fashion,
14		regarding the use of repetitive leading
15		questions and the impact of such questioning
16		upon the reliability of reports by young
17		children?
18	Α.	My understanding of the data she's presented
19		is that it can indeed affect a child's
20		response.
21	Q.	In what way?
22	A.	In what way? The child may be led in the
23		course of repetitive questions. The child may
24	and the second second second	take it as a demand for more information. The

""" A C FENGAU - 1-8" 31-6389

עווא באטרווי

v

2-269 1 child might feel that he or she is not 2 believed if the question continues to be 3 repeated, or the child may start to 4 confabulate, feeling the interviewer wants 5 additional information. And based on your understanding and knowledge 6 Q. 7 of your peers, the community of professionals and colleagues who you work with on a regular 8 9 basis, those views -- are those views generally accepted within that community? 10 Yes. In fact, this is something we have all 11 Α. cautioned about for many years. It's been a 12 matter of intuition and judgment that it's 13 14 not a good idea to lead children, but the 15 research data has been sorely lacking, and I think we have welcomed this sort of research 16 17 to bring us back to scientific foothold that there is a scientific basis for our fears 18 19 about using leading questions. Dr. Schetky, did you review the portion of 20 Q. Dr. Bruck's affidavit, and did you hear her 21 testimony in the courtroom, regarding the 22 23 effect of the emotional tone of an interviewer upon the reliability of reports 24

Э

531-6989

PENGAD + 1-F

D V ON

	1	2-270 by young children?
:	2 A.	I did hear that.
	3 Q.	
4		And with respect to the views that Dr. Bruck
		expressed and the research that she relied
		upon with respect to that particular subject
6	5	matter, are those views, in your opinion,
7		generally accepted today within the field of
8		child psychiatry?
9	A.	Yes, they are.
10	Q.	Now, did you review the section of Dr.
11		Bruck's affidavit, and did you hear her
12		testimony, regarding the use of anatomically
13		correct dolls and drawings of naked people as
14		as props or as devices to be used during
15		interviews with young children, and the
16		impact of those particular techniques upon
17		the reliability of subsequent reports?
18	A.	Yes, I heard her testimony.
19	Q.	Is it fair to say that there's there
20		continues to be a certain amount of
21		controversy over whether or not it is ever
22		appropriate to use these kinds of techniques
23		in interviewing young children?
24	Α.	The controversy continues. I would say most

ł

F0F0-101 10 1

{

2-271 1 of us are wary at this point about using the 2 dolls. Mine have been sitting in a closet, covered with dust, for several years now. 3 4 Q. And with respect to the particular concerns 5 that Dr. Bruck expressed regarding the use of those dolls in the context of interviews in 6 7 which other suggestive techniques are 8 employed, do you have an opinion about 9 whether her views on that particular subject 10 are generally accepted within the field of 11 child psychiatry today? 12 They're accepted and they're consistent with Α. 13 what we teach. Now, Dr. Schetky, did you review the portion 14 Q. 15 of Dr. Bruck's affidavit, and were you 16 present to hear her testimony, regarding the effect of peer pressure during interviews 17 18 with young children upon the reliability of 19 their subsequent reports? Yes, I heard that and I read about it. 20 Α. 21 And in your opinion, are the views expressed Q. 22 by Dr. Bruck and the research that she relied 23 upon with respect to the impact of peer pressure on reliability, are those views, and 24

10/97D

ND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-81 - 331-6989

FORM LASER

	1	2-272
		is that research generally accepted today
	2	within the field of child psychiatry?
-	3 A.	It is accepted within my speciality field.
4	Q.	Now, did you hear Dr. Bruck's testimony in
5	5	the courtroom regarding certain other
6		suggestive techniques other than the ones
7		I've mentioned so far?
8	A.	(No verbal response.)
9	Q.	Stereotype induction, for instance?
10	A.	Oh. Okay. Yes.
11	Q.	Okay. And what is stereotype induction?
12	A.	This is where you convey a mental picture of
13		the character of a particular person that
14		then gets in the child's mind-set and may to
15		some degree affect their recall or testimony.
16		If you, for instance, portray a teacher as
17		bad, they may be more likely to report that
18		teacher doing bad things than if you
19		portrayed a picture of that teacher as being
20		kindly, good.
21	Q.	In the field of child psychiatry today, can
22		you say whether it is generally recognized
23		that stereotype induction, as used as you
24		have described it, is a suggestive technique
L		~ Duggestive technique

R060-100-

 which could well adversely affect the reliability of reports by young children? A. That concept is accepted, yes. 	273 u
2 reliability of reports by young children?	u
	u
	u
$4 \qquad Q$. What about selective set c	u
5 hear Dr. Bruck's testimony about selective	
6 reinforcement?	
7 A. I did.	
8 Q. And just to refresh us, what is selective	
9 reinforcement?	
10 A. Selective reinforcement is where the	
11 interviewer pursues those desirable	
12 responses, often disregarding other	
13 information the child has given them because	
14 it doesn't fit with their particular	
15 hypothesis.	
16 Q. And with respect to Dr. Bruck's testimony an	d
17 the research that she relied upon in	u
18 testifying about selective reinforcement, is	
19 that testimony is that research and her	
20 views on this subject, are they generally	
21 accepted today within the field of child	
22 psychiatry, if you can say?	
23 A. Yes, they are.	
24 Q. Now, did you hear Dr. Bruck's testimony	

10/97D

FOHM LASE COND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1- ----631-6989

	1	2-274 regarding the technique of blurring the line
:	2	between reality and fartanees it
	3	between reality and fantasy, that is, playing let's pretend games?
4	1 A.	Yes.
ſ	5 Q.	
e	~	And you heard her testimony regarding the
		impact of that technique on the reliability
7		or unreliability of resulting reports by
8		young children?
9	A.	I did.
10	Q.	And the research that she's relied upon?
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	Are her views on that subject and the
13		research that she relied upon, in your
14		opinion, generally accepted today within the
15		field of child psychiatry?
16	A.	Yes, they are.
17	Q.	Now, did you read the section of Dr. Bruck's
18		affidavit and did you hear her testimony over
19		the last two days regarding the cumulative
20		impact of multiple suggestive techniques upon
21		the reliability of reports by preschool
22		children?
23	Α.	Yes, I did.
24	Q.	And with respect to her views on that

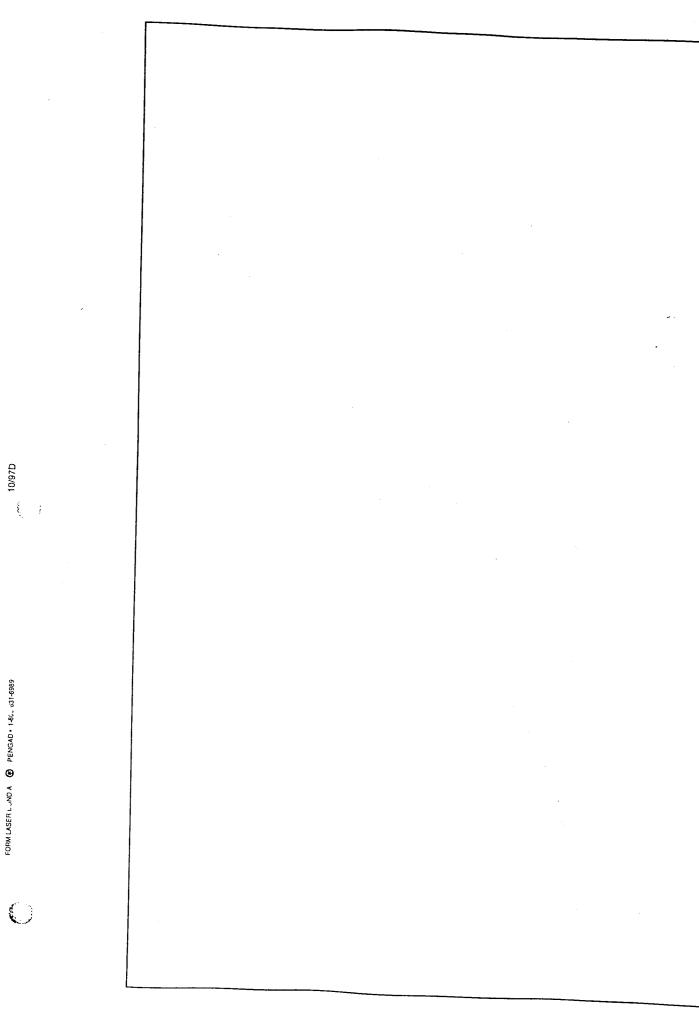
4040-1 Ph-

	1	2 - 275
	1	subject, and the research that she relied
	2	upon in testifying, and her affidavit, are
	3	those views and is that research generally
. 4	4	accepted today within the field of child
5	5	psychiatry?
e	5 A.	Some of the research she cited is relatively
	7	new, and I'm not sure how widely disseminated
8	3	it is amongst my profession. Certainly the
9		concept is one we're aware of and which we
10		incorporate in any guidelines about how to
11		interview children.
12	Q.	Now, did you hear Dr. Bruck's testimony that
13		in her opinion younger children are more
14		vulnerable to suggestion than older children?
15	A.	Yes, I did.
16	Q.	Is that particular view one which is
17		generally accepted today within the field of
18		child psychiatry?
19	A.	Very much so.
20	Q.	Did you hear Dr. Bruck's testimony regarding
21		methods of minimizing or reducing unreliable
22		reporting by small children in conducting an
23		interview?
24	A.	I did.

.

FOHM LASEF, JND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-6 031-0989

U/9/01



2-276 1 And with respect to that subject matter, are Q. 2 there generally accepted views in your field reflected, for example, in the parameters 3 that have been admitted as Exhibit 25 at this 4 5 hearing, or 24 at this hearing? 6 MS. ROONEY: Objection as to 7 vagueness. I'm not clear on what exactly -what view we're talking about right now. 8 9 MR. SULTAN: Okay. 10 THE COURT: Rephrase the question. 11 MR. SULTAN: Yes, your Honor. 12 [By Mr. Sultan:] What do you recall about what Dr. Bruck had 13 Q. 14 to say regarding how to minimize unreliable 15 reports in interviewing young children? 16 She addressed the value of getting a Α. 17 narrative history, which is certainly 18 something echoed in the child psychiatry 19 literature as well as the literature on 20 memory in children; that narrative history tends to be much more reliable than questions 21 in response to pot-shot questions --22 responses to -- answers to pot-shot 23 24 questions.

ſ

10/970

FORM LASER JNU A 😧 PENGAD • 1-6 631-6989

		2 - 277
-		She stressed the value of the
2	2	initial interview. She stressed the value of
3	3	an interview that occurs in close proximity
4		to the alleged event as opposed to one that
5		occurs several years later.
6	Q.	Interviewer bias, do you recall what she said
7		about the importance of an unbiased
8		interviewer?
9	A.	Certainly the research would confirm our
10		clinical apprehension that bias in the
11		interview can color the whole interview and
12		lead to such things as selective
13		reinforcement. It can affect the emotional
14		tone of the interview. I've seen interviews
15		where the interviewer is very remote until
16		the child starts talking about sexual views,
17		and suddenly they're reinforcing their
18		responses, and much more interactive, and
19		much warmer, and patting them on the head,
20		and telling them what a good job they did.
21	Q.	Is there a general consensus in the field of
22		child psychiatry regarding the kind of people
23		who should be doing interviews of
24		preschoolers in sexual abuse cases?
L	<u> </u>	

FORM LASER BOND A 🏵 PENGAD + 1-600-631-6989

 \bigcirc

10/97D •...

2-278 1 I think it requires very particular skills. Α. 2 Certainly you need some knowledge of child 3 development, of how memory develops in 4 children, understanding the fact that most preschoolers don't think very abstractly, are 5 not able to handle symbolic language; that 6 7 they may be confused by multiple pronouns 8 being thrown at them, or rapid transitions in 9 the line of questioning. 10 You need to pare down the length of 11 your sentences to approximately the child's. 12 You need to know where the child is 13 developmentally. Just because they're 14 chronologically four or five, doesn't mean 15 they're four or five mentally. 16 You also need to know something about where that child lives. You cannot 17 18 evaluate them in a void. You need to know 19 about their life experiences, about what might be going on in the home to account for 20 some of these suspicious behaviors; about 21 what their exposure to sexuality has been; 22 whether there's been any other abuse. 23 Are those basic concepts reflected in Exhibit 24 Q.

10/97D

JRU A 😧 PERGAD+1.1. -631-6989

LURAL ASUL

2 - 2791 24, the parameters of the Academy? 2 Α. Yes, they are. 3 And they're generally accepted within your Q. 4 field today? 5 Α. Absolutely. 6 THE COURT: We're going to take a 7 ten-minute recess. [Recess 3:13 p.m.] 8 9 [Hearing resumes 3:26 p.m.] 10 11 12 MR. SULTAN: May I proceed, your 13 Honor? 14 DR. DIANE H. SCHETKY, RESUMED 15 DIRECT EXAMINATION, RESUMED 16 17 BY MR. SULTAN: Dr. Schetky, are you familiar, or were you 18 Q. familiar in 1987 with the state of 19 20 professional literature and what was generally accepted in your field respecting 21 the fields of memory in young children, 22 23 suggestiveness of young children, and the impact of various interviewing techniques 24

56) JOND A G PENGAD 11 J-631-6989

10/97D

FORM LASE, JON

1		2-280 upon the reliability of the reports of young
2		children?
3	A.	
		I became familiar in that time period because
4		I happened to be writing coauthoring a
5		book on child sexual abuse at that time. So I
6		was trying to review what was out there.
7	Q.	What was the state of knowledge and the state
8		of the literature in this area at that time?
9	A.	Not a lot out there. I would say most of the
10		memory studies dealt with adults. There were
11		few studies suggesting the suggestibility of
12		children, but they certainly did not in any
13	1	way replicate a forensic setting.
14		There were some studies out on
15		eyewitness testimony in children and how that
16	1	
17		wasn't very reliable, particularly young
		children, suggesting that young children are
18	1	much more suggestible. But we know that all
19]	people are suggestible, but young children
20	r	more so than middle-aged children.
21		And there was very little out there
22	נ	regarding suggestibility in the area of child
23		sexual abuse. In fact, we weren't hearing
24		much about false allegations then either.

કાર્યાપ્રીકેલ્સ 🥵 ક્લિસ્ટિંગ કાર્યાલ્સ

Ú

2-281 Was there a systematic body of science that 1 Q. 2 existed at that time with respect to the 3 suggestibility of young children and the impact of various interviewing techniques? 4 It wasn't a large body at all. 5 Α. Were there detailed protocols that existed at 6 Q. that time as to how interviews should and 7 8 should not be conducted? 9 Α. None that I'm aware of. And were there -- the principles that Dr. 10 Q. Bruck discussed over the last two days 11 12 regarding various interviewing techniques and 13 their impact, that you say are now generally 14 accepted in your scientific community, were those principles generally accepted within 15 your scientific community back in the mid-16 17 1980s? No. We were working in the dark. 18 Α. Now, how about today, describe in general 19 Q. what kind of evolution has occurred with 20 respect to the development of science, and 21 22 what is generally accepted in this field within your professional community over the 23 past decade or so? 24

FURM LASEF 3ND A 🔂 PENGAD • 1-€ 631-6989

10/2/1

r.Chim

		2 - 2 8 2
	1 A.	I think the courts got ahead of the
2	2	profession in terms of the types of questions
3	3	they were asking us in regard to sexual
4	ŧ	abuse, and expert witnesses responded to
5	5	these questions based on opinion or intuition
6		rather than giving answers that were data-
7		based. And I think professionals probably
8		thought they were being helpful. The other
9		problem was the data simply was not there at
10		that time.
11	Q.	What about today, is the data there today?
12	A.	Absolutely.
13	Q.	Thank you.
14		MR. SULTAN: I have no further
15		questions, your Honor.
16		
17	CROS	SS-EXAMINATION
18		IS. ROONEY:
19	Q.	
20		Dr. Schetky, you stated that you can't speak
21		to the general community, that you can speak
22	٨	about acceptance among your colleagues?
23	A.	I can't speak for all child psychiatrists.
	Q.	You can only speak to your colleagues, is
24		that correct? Did I misunderstand you?
L		

FUHM LASE: UND A 🕲 PENGAD • 1- - 631-6989

2-283 1 Well, I will rephrase it. I cannot obviously Α. speak for every child psychiatrist in the 2 country. I can speak as an Officer of the 3 4 American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry. I can tell you what the position 5 of the American Academy is. I can also speak 6 as one who is well acquainted with most of 7 8 the other child psychiatrists doing forensics because there are very few of us. There are 9 probably only two dozen in the country who do 10 11 a lot of this. 12 Q. Only two dozen psychiatrists? 13 Child psychiatrists who specialize in child Α. 14 forensic psychiatry. 15 And when you speak about your colleagues, Q. when you're referring to your colleagues, are 16 17 you talking about the two dozen who 18 specialized in the field of child --19 No. I'm saying this is accepted by the Α. 20 American Academy of Child and Adolescent 21 Psychiatry, that would encompass all of our membership. Certainly our guidelines are 22 directed towards all of them. They've gotten 23 24 that message.

JND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-8 331-6989

FORM LASER

3	L Q.	2-284 And in fact 1
2	~~	And in fact, what you're saying, just to be
		clear, you're saying that it's
3		In terms of the guidelines, yes.
4	2.	The guidelines are generally accepted?
5	Α.	Yes. If we're talking about some of the
6		research
7	Q.	Yes.
8	A.	probably your average child psychiatrist
9		who doesn't work in forensics may not be
10		conversant with it, but I think those who
11		spend time working, evaluating very young
12		children, evaluating allegations of sexual
13		abuse, are well acquainted with the current
14		research.
15	Q.	And that is approximately two dozen you're
16		estimating?
17	A.	I'm talking about people whom I would
18		consider to have expertise. I'm sure there
19		are many more out there doing these
20		evaluations.
21	Q.	But when you
22	Α.	Many being asked to do it because there are
23		no real experts in their area. So most child
24		psychiatrists are evaluating child sexual

FORMLASER JRD A 🏵 PENGAD - 1-6 631-6989

2 - 285abuse even though they don't have forensic 1 2 training. I'm just trying to clarify. I believe when 3 Q. you started you indicated that you could not 4 speak for the general community but that you 5 could speak for your colleagues. And I'm just 6 7 trying to establish, when you're saying "your colleagues, " are you referring specifically 8 to the two dozen, more or less, individuals 9 10 who specialize in this field of child --It depends what the question is. 11 Α. When you're talking about the general 12 Q. 13 acceptance of the research underlying 14 interviewer bias, are you saying that that is generally accepted by your colleagues? 15 It is accepted in terms of that is what is 16 Α. 17 promulgated by the American Academy of Child 18 and Adolescent Psychiatry as is reflected in our guidelines. It is certainly reflected in 19 the scientific articles that are published in 20 our journals, that this is standard of 21 22 practice currently. Standard practice, okay. But I'm asking you 23 Q. about the theory about interviewer bias, is 24

C

U/A/U

1-6989

PENGAD · 1-800

Θ

٨C

FORM LASER B.

1		2-286 the theory about interviewer bias generally
2		accepted among all child psychiatrists, is
- 3		that your testimony?
4	A.	
5	Q.	I cannot speak for every child psychiatrist. Thank you.
6	A.	
7		It is certainly accepted as it is reflected
8		in our journal, in our newsletter, in our
		practice parameters
9	Q.	So you're indicating that
10	A.	that this is the ideal. I cannot tell you
11		what every psychiatrist is doing in terms of
12		how they're conducting evaluation, clearly.
13	Q.	So you can't tell us today whether or not the
14		theory underlying interviewer bias is
15		generally accepted among child psychiatrists,
16		in general, correct?
17	A.	It's accepted in terms of that is being
18		what's taught to our trainees across the
19		country.
20	Q.	But you can't tell us whether or not, in
21		general, in the community of child
22		psychiatrists, the theory about interviewer
23		bias is generally accepted. You can tell us
24		that it's in the papers and the guidelines,

		. 2 - 2 8 7
1	•	is that correct?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	And with respect to the theory of repetitive
4		leading questions, again, when you talked
5		about general acceptance, are we talking in
6		the same manner? You can't tell us whether or
7		not it's generally accepted among all child
8	•	psychiatrists, but again, you can say these
9		are in the guidelines as well?
10	A.	I would be hard pressed to come up with a
11		name of any child psychiatrist who was in
12		favor of leading questions.
13	Q.	So, when we're talking about repetitive
14		leading questions and the theory underlying
15		that, how many questions are considered too
16		many?
17	A.	It is commonly suggested you might ask the
18		same question twice, perhaps rewording it a
19		little bit to make sure the child has
20		understood it. But if you persistently get
21		"no" twice, that you don't pursue that line
22		of questioning. I mean it's
23	Q.	So it's your testimony that the generally
24		accepted principle here is that two

(

FORM LASER 4D A 😧 PENGAD • 1-8(31-6989

U

-	1	questions, if you go beyond that
2	2	questions, if you go beyond that, then you're going to get into some trouble, is that the
. 3	3	general acceptance?
4	A.	
5	5 Q.	It's not?
6	A.	I'm saying, as a guideline, we teach
7		minimizing the number of questions.
8	Q.	What you teach, but I'm trying to ask you
9		what is generally accepted. What is the
10		consensus among child psychiatrists, your
11		colleagues, about the number of questions,
12		when you're talking about repetitive leading
13		questions, how many is too many, what's the
14		number that everybody agrees on?
15	A.	There is no consensus. Nobody has done a
16		poll.
17	Q.	And with respect to, I believe you talked a
18		little bit about the emotional tone, you said
19		there's a theory about the emotional tone of
20		an interview. Would you agree that there's a
21		spectrum: some interviews may be highly
22		charged, and other interviews may not have as
23		much emotion involved in it?
24	Α.	First of all, I don't believe I used the word

~١

10/97D

FORM LASE OND A 🌒 PENGAD • 1. JE31-6989

 $\hat{\mathbb{C}}$

2-289 1 "theory" about the emotional tone. 2 Well, what word did you use? Q. That it's accepted that emotional tone can 3 Α. affect the quality of the interview and the 4 5 responses elicited. That's not a theory. 6 How much emotional tone? Q. 7 Α. How much? 8 Yes. What's the general consensus? Ο. 9 Certainly if you're being exceedingly Α. aggressive with a child, intimidating them, 10 coming on as too authoritarian, that can 11 influence the data you get. It could be --12 But what is the general consensus? If someone 13 Q. 14 were to say, the general consensus among the 15 relevant scientific community is that this 16 amount of emotion is too much, what's the 17 amount? What's the consensus? 18 Again, nobody has done surveys on this. It Α. 19 comes down to using good clinical judgment, 20 conducting your interview in a way that does not intimidate or harm that child in any way, 21 and in a way that's going to elicit the most 22 valid information. 23 So you would agree with me that some child 24 Q.

10/97D

FORM LASE OND A 😧 PENGAD • 1: -631-6989

2-290 psychiatrists might consider one interview to 1 have overriding emotional factors, and 2 3 another psychiatrist looking at that same 4 interview might have a different opinion, is 5 that correct? No, I didn't say that. 6 Α. 7 So everybody, every child psychiatrist within Q. the community is going to look at one 8 interview and they're going to say, that 9 interview has too much emotion overriding it, 10 11 is that correct? 12 I think we would probably agree on the Α. 13 extremes. There would obviously be difference 14 of opinion as you approach the middle ground. So would you agree that some are going to 15 Q. 16 have an opinion about some, and others are 17 going to have a different opinion. There's 18 differing opinions on what is too much in a 19 particular interview? Again, I think most child psychiatrists would 20 Α. recognize the extremes of inappropriate 21 behavior. This might include very seductive 22 behavior, reinforcing desired questions, or 23 the interviewer who comes on too strong, 24

1		2-291 threatens the child, intimidates them, uses
2		
3		coercive techniques. I don't think anybody
4		would agree that those are okay.
	Q.	Now, you indicated that you talked a
5		little bit about cumulative impact, and that
6		there's general acceptance about the
7		cumulative impact of some of these qualities,
8		is that correct
9	A.	Yes.
10	Q.	did you testify to that?
11		And exactly what research points to that,
12		what is the general consensus, what research
13		is it that points to the cumulative impact?
14	A.	Well, we have the Garven Study for one, where
15		in essence it's combining a lot of bad
16		techniques, and if you have more than one bad
17		technique, if you add in some of these other
18		bad techniques on top of suggestive leading
19		interviews, you're going to get higher and
20		higher incidents of false reports.
21	Q.	Do you know what year that study was, the
22		Garven Study?
23	Α.	Yes. I can give you the reference if you
24		want. I don't have the year right here. I

ותאנה

•

FORM LASER VD A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-81 31-6989

 \bigcirc

1		2-292 believe it's a fairly recent one.
2	_ Q.	Any other studies other than the Garven
3		Study?
4	A.	Poole and Lindsay.
5	Q.	Again, a recent study?
6	A.	Poole and Lindsay
7	Q.	Is that a recent study?
8	A.	yes, it's fairly recent.
9		And the Ceci Studies.
10	Q.	Dr. Schetky, would you agree with me that
11		there has been little research done on the
12		emotional components of disclosure and their
13		relationship to suggestibility?
14	A.	I'm not sure what you mean by that question.
15	Q.	Are you familiar with the process of
16		disclosure?
17	A.	Yes.
18	Q.	Would you agree that that's an emotional
19		process for a child?
20	A.	It can be.
21	Q.	Some children just don't have any - no
22		problem
23	Α.	I've seen that, too.
24	Q.	disclosing it?
Ľ		

PENGAD + 1 - 1831-8989

ł

أريد

2-293 I've seen that, too, particularly those 1 Α. who've been repeatedly interviewed. They're 2 sort of like zombies. They rattle it off very 3 4 mechanically. Well, would you agree with me that there 5 Ο. 6 hasn't been any research conducted on abuse 7 populations? 8 Α. Any research on what? Would you agree that there has been no group 9 Q. of sexually abused children that have been 10 11 involved in any of these research studies 12 with respect to suggestibility? With respect to suggestibility? 13 Α. 14 0. Yes. 15 Well, you get into very difficult ethical Α. 16 questions here. Well, have they ever been involved in any 17 Q. 18 such study? Probably not, for good ethical reasons. 19 Α. Now, I'd like to talk with you a few minutes 20 Ο. about the rate of error in some of these 2122 studies. Would you agree with me that there's very little known about the degree to which 23 any particular child, from a particular age 24

0 • 1-აას-631-6989

10/97D

FORM LASE) . JOND A 🕒 PENGAD • 1-50-631-6989

]		2 - 2 9 4
		group, is likely to produce an incorrect
2		response when exposed to suggestion?
3	A.	No. I think there's consensus there.
4	Q.	What is the consensus?
5	A.	That three-year-olds are much more
6		suggestible.
7	Q.	I'm not talking about three-year-olds in
8		general. I'm talking about one child. Is
9		there any research that says Child A, who is
10		three-years-old, is more likely to produce an
11		incorrect response when exposed to
12		suggestion?
13	A.	Than who?
14	Q.	Child B?
15	A.	Well, tell me about Child B.
16	Q.	So you can tell me?
17	A.	I'm asking you.
18	Q.	Okay.
19	A.	Your question doesn't make sense.
20	Q.	So if I present a child to you
21	A.	Mm-hmm.
22	Q.	you can interview a child and you can say:
23		This child is highly resistant to suggestion.
24		Can you say that?

וחיארם

FORM LASE - 'OND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1 1-631-6989

Ĵ

1	A.	2-295 Uhm			
2	2 Q.	Yes or no. Can you say that?			
3	A.	A. There are too many variables. I would have to			
4		know what questions were put to the child.			
5	Q.	No, my question is, a particular child?			
6	A.	It depends who's questioning them; what the			
7		question is.			
8	Q.	Well, would you agree that children have			
9		different personality traits?			
10	A.	There are too many variables here. I cannot			
11		give you a simple response.			
12	Q.	Well, my question is, Dr. Schetky, can you			
13		point to one child and say: This child, if			
14		subjected to a number of interviews, is going			
15		to be highly resistant to suggestion in the			
16		interviews, or this is a child who is going			
17		to fall sway to the suggestion right off the			
18		bat? Can you identify which child is going to			
19		fall into which category?			
20	A.	There's certainly profiles.			
21	Q.	So you can do that?			
22	Α.	There's a whole list in one of your			
23		references by Brown on factors which heighten			
24		suggestibility.			
ł					

•

 $\mathbf{ }$

2 - 2961 So you can take -- so it would be possible Q. 2 for you to look at a particular child, spend 3 some time with that child, and decide whether 4 or not that child would fall sway to 5 someone's suggestion more easily than another 6 child? 7 I could use Brown's profile and say: Gee, Α. based on these factors, this child's probably 8 at high risk for being suggestible. 9 10 So you can predict that? Q. 11 I said probable. Α. 12 THE COURT: Is it possible that each 13 child then could respond differently? 14 THE WITNESS: Indeed they can, but 15 that's why it doesn't help talking about 16 these kids in the abstract. I'm not going to 17 evaluate any child in the abstract. I need to know a lot more information about the child, 18 19 including their cognitive development --20 [By Ms. Rooney:] Would you agree with the statement that even 21 Q. in studies with significant suggestibility 22 effects, there are always some children who 23 are highly resistant to suggestion? Would you 24

FORM LASER ND A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-8. J31-6989

11/9/11

Ē

	agree with that?
A.	I don't know if I could say always.
	Sometimes.
Q.	So you don't agree with that statement?
A.	I would need to know more about the research.
Q.	Do you agree with the statement that some
	children incorporate suggestions quickly even
	after one short interview?
A.	I've certainly seen that.
Q.	Do you agree with that statement?
Α.	Some, yes.
Q.	And in a way you don't agree with it?
A.	I'm not going to generalize to all children,
	or use terms like always and never.
Q.	And yet, you've just testified here to the
	general acceptance in the community about all
	these theories. So you're generalizing there,
	are you not?
A.	I think I defined what terms I was talking
	about and in regard to what concept.
Q.	And you in fact said that those concepts
	about which you testified, those are
	generally accepted; you're generalizing
	there?
	Q. A. Q. A. Q. A. Q. A.

ī

. --

ਸਕਰੇਸੀ ਕਰਨਨ ਪੰਤਰ 🚯 ਹਨ ਸਭ ਜਬਨਨ

 $\langle \rangle$

		2 - 2 9 8			
]	A.	No.			
2	2 Q.	You're not generalizing?			
3	A.	A. It's based on my knowledge of what's in our			
4		literature, what our practice parameters are,			
5		what is taught to trainees, what I have			
6		taught in institutes; my personal contact			
7		with most of the child forensic psychiatrists			
8		in this country.			
9	Q.	Are you telling this Court that a particular			
10		child's accuracy can be estimated by the			
11		percentage quoted in some of these research			
12		findings?			
13	A.	No. It will give you a profile as to where			
14		this child might fall in the spectrum			
15		theoretically.			
16	Q.	In fact			
17	A.	I'm not going to use that, however, to			
18		determine how I feel about their disclosures			
19		necessarily. It might alert me that this kid			
20		is more suggestible.			
21	Q.	Would you agree that the research is unable			
22		to account for individual differences in			
23		children's responses?			
24	Α.	I don't think I can answer that.			

10/97D

FORM LASE, JOND A 🚯 PENGAD • 1-W-631-6989

U

_		2 - 2 9 9
1		Would you agree that there is no study that
2		perfectly mimics the constellation of
3		variables observed in any particular case?
4	Α.	(No verbal response.)
5	Q.	Are you having trouble understanding my
6		question?
7	A.	No. You're jumping all over. I'm trying to
8		think about this.
9	Q.	Take your time.
10	A.	All right. Clearly, there have been no
11		studies that absolutely replicate child
12		sexual abuse. We've agreed on that. But when
13		you say there's no study that replicates a
14		particular child, I have to know more about
15		that particular child.
16	Q.	So in fact, it's your testimony that there
17		may be a particular research study which
18		mimics the constellation of factors in a
19		given case for a child who's alleged to have
20		been sexually abused?
21	A.	No. I can't answer that because I don't know
22		the given factors you're talking about.
23	Q.	Because children there are a lot of
24		variables when you're talking about children?
L		

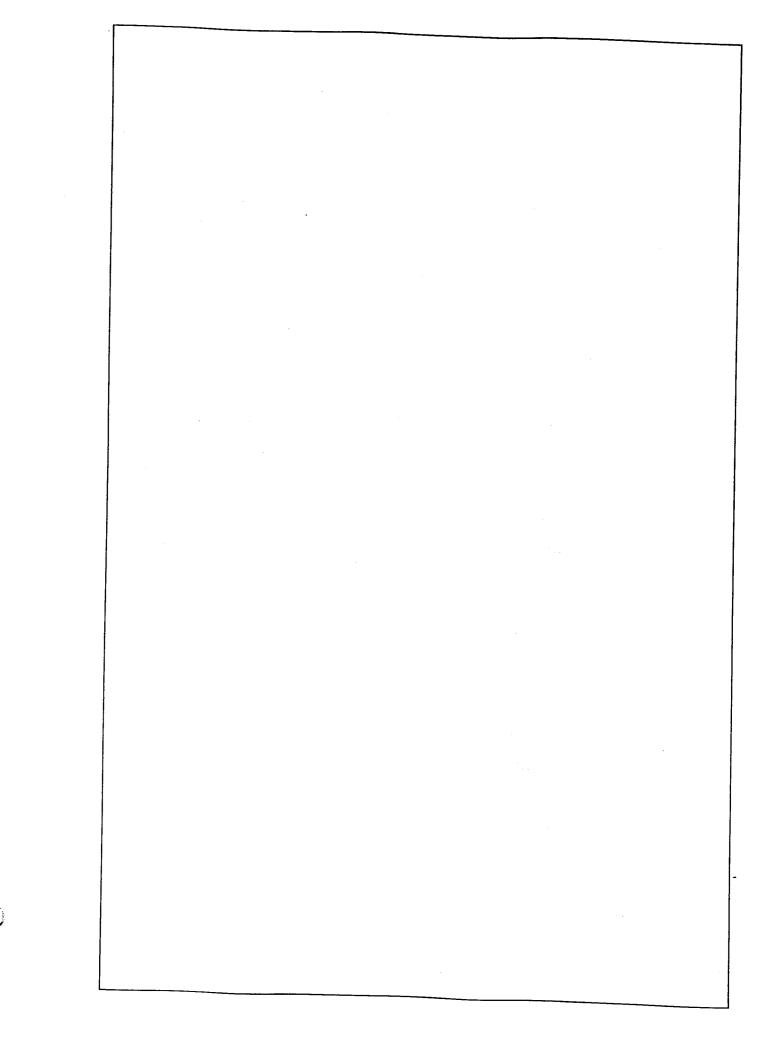
FORM LASE OND A 😧 PENGAD • 1- -631-6989

1	7	2 - 3 0 0
_	A.	Sure there are.
2	Q.	Would you agree that all these studies that
3		we've talked about, the results vary both
4		among and within those studies?
5	A.	Again, I'd want to know what you mean by all.
6		You're asking me to make sweeping assumptions
7		here which I'm not going to do.
8	Q.	So you're not going to comment on whether or
9		not the studies that we've been talking about
10		have varying differences within those
11		studies?
12	A.	Again, which studies.
13	Q.	Well, let's talk about the Inoculation Study
14		for a moment. Phase one of that study they
15		found that children it wasn't so easy to
16		influence children about personal salient
17		events, correct?
18	A.	Yes.
19	Q.	Phase two of that study, they found that,
20		yeah, maybe you can?
21	A.	Yes.
22	Q.	Would you agree that in that one study, the
23		results varied?
24	· A.	That's true.

10/97D

FORM LASEK _ ND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-6 & 31-6989

í...-



1		2-301
	~	In that one study?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	And you would agree with me that there are
4		other studies which have different phases, in
5		which phase one might have one result, and
6		phase two might have another result?
7	A.	That's true.
8	Q.	In fact, it's rare that one can replicate a
9		study and get the exact same findings in
10		phase two that they got in phase one. Would
11		you agree with me?
12	A.	That's probably true.
13	Q.	And you would agree that there are a number
14		of factors that vary widely among these
15		suggestibility studies, specifically, some of
16		the studies have mildly suggestive questions,
17		true?
18	A.	Well, they vary in the ages of children, the
19		sexes of the children, the children are
20		different in each study, the interviews are
21		different. So you've got many many variables.
22	Q.	There's some of them have forced-choice
23		questions, correct?
24	Α.	Yes.
-		

		2 - 3 0 2
1	Q.	Some have questions that are purposefully
2		misleading?
3	A.	Yes.
4	Q.	Some of these studies, the interview is
5		conducted immediately after the event,
6		correct?
7	A.	That's true.
8	Q.	Some of them, they conduct the interview five
9		days later, correct?
10	A.	Yes.
11	Q.	Sometimes they conduct the interview a month
12		later?
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	Sometimes they conduct the interview even a
15		year later?
16	A.	That's true.
17	Q.	Some of these studies involve events in which
18		the child actually participated in?
19	A.	Yes.
20	Q.	Some of these studies involve events which
21		the child merely observed?
22	Α.	True.
23	Q.	Some of these studies contain some emotional
24		components, is that correct?
L		

Inter C

I OUREEVSEN JUA 🚯 PERGAD+ 1-80 31-6989 Û

1	A.	Yes. 2-303			
2	2 Q.	And some do not?			
3	A.	True.			
4	Q.	Q. Some studies focus on the suggestibility			
5		that's raised when you have repeated			
6		questions within one interview?			
7	A.	Yes.			
8	Q.	Some of them focus on the repeated questions			
9		within numerous interviews, correct?			
10	A.	Yes.			
11	Q.	Some of them only have one interview?			
12	A.	True.			
13	Q.	And some have many interviews?			
14	A.	True.			
15	Q.	So you'd agree with me that there's a wide			
16		variety in all these studies that have been			
17		talked about the past two days?			
18	A.	Yes, there is.			
19	Q.	Now, you've talked a great deal about the			
20		general acceptance of the studies conducted			
21		by Dr. Bruck?			
22	A.	Yes.			
23	Q.	Would you agree with me that Dr. Bruck and			
24		Stephen Ceci have been criticized for their			

וממות

FURIM LASER VD A 😢 PENGAD • 1-81 31-6989

 \bigcirc

		2 - 3 0 4
1	-	lack of objectivity and generalizing from
2		their data?
3	A.	No.
4	Q.	They've never been criticized for that?
5	A.	I'm not aware of the criticism.
6	Q.	Would you would you agree with the fact
7		that Ceci and Bruck acknowledge that
8		scientists disagree whether suggestibility
9		effects render a child's original memory
10		inaccessible?
11	A.	I can't answer that. You're asking me to tell
12		you what Dr. Bruck thinks?
13	Q.	What her research says. That is what you're
14		here to testify about, is it not?
15	A.	Yes. Well, I can't answer that particular
16		question.
17	Q.	So it's your testimony that you don't know
18		whether or not scientists disagree whether or
19		not suggestibility effects render a child's
20		original memory inaccurate or inaccessible?
21	A.	No, I'm not testifying to that.
22	Q.	Well? Does an interview change a child's
23		memory?
24	A.	What interview?

U/9/1

FORM LASER IND A 😧 PENGAD • 1-8 JJ1-6989

Ú

2 - 3051 Any interview? A suggestive interview? Q. 2 You're talking so globally, I'm not going to Α. 3 answer that Dr. Schetky, is it your testimony that a 4 Q. 5 suggestive interview would render a child's memory inaccurate or merely the child's 6 7 report of an event inaccurate? 8 Α. My testimony is --9 MR. SULTAN: Well, I object --10 Α. -- neither --11 MR. SULTAN: Excuse me. Your Honor, I 12 object. The prosecution didn't want me to elicit this witness's own views, and now I 13 14 think she's being -- we're going to open up what her own views are, and I think that 15 16 given the prosecution's objection to my 17 eliciting this witness's personal views was sustained, I don't think they should be 18 permitted on cross to, in effect, cross-19 examine her on the views I was not permitted 20 21 to elicit on direct. 22 THE COURT: I'm going to ask you to 23 rephrase the question. 24 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, I didn't

11/9/11

331-6989

PENGAD · 1-(

Θ

A UN

FORM LASEF

2-306 1 object to Dr. Schetky's opinions. I merely 2 objected to her characterizing, or giving me 3 an opinion as to Dr. Bruck's credibility. 4 THE COURT: She didn't render her own opinion about some of this, so I'll let you 5 6 pursue the area, but rephrase the question. 7 [By Ms. Rooney:] Ceci and Bruck acknowledge that scientists 8 Q. disagree whether or not suggestibility 9 effects render the child's original memory 10 11 inaccessible. Do you agree with that? 12 MR. SULTAN: I object to the form of 13 the question. I don't understand whether 14 she's being asked whether Ceci and Bruck say that, or whether she agrees with a statement 15 16 that's attributed to Ceci and Bruck. 17 THE COURT: Clarify that. Are you 18 asking whether she knows that they said that? 19 [By Ms. Rooney:] 20 Do you agree with the statement by Ceci and Q. 21 Bruck where they state that scientists 22 disagree whether suggestibility effects 23 render the child's original memory 24 inaccessible?

0.001

then h

Ð

2 - 3071 Α. Yes. That remains controversial. 2 MS. ROONEY: No further questions. 3 MR. SULTAN: Nothing further, your 4 Honor. 5 THE COURT: You may step down. 6 (Witness excused.) 7 MR. SULTAN: The defense has no 8 further witnesses to present. We would at 9 this time, in case we need to do this formally, proffer into evidence all of the 10 11 exhibits which have been previously marked. 12 [Defendant rests 3:54 p.m.] 13 14 15 THE COURT: I deemed them formally 16 admitted yesterday. So they're in evidence, 17 and they number, I think, 56. 18 So, now, I need to ask the 19 Commonwealth a couple of things. First of 20 all, to this day I still don't know who you will be calling as an expert or experts? 21 22 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, prior to 23 that, I just have a few motions with respect to Dr. Schetky's testimony, just to keep the 24

10/8/01

6969-1 CC

PENGAD · 1-E

Э

A Uhi

C EV L VE

ς.

record in order.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

6969-LE.

PENGAD • 1-8*

Э

< 01.

L CIES L VILLE

THE COURT: Sure. Okay.

MS. ROONEY: The Commonwealth would move to strike her testimony based on two items. First of all, there's been no testimony with respect to the relevancy of the research studies by Dr. Schetky and the facts of this case. In fact, she acknowledged that she has in fact no knowledge other than reading Dr. Bruck's affidavit as to the facts of this case. And my understanding, pursuant to Lanigan, there has to be -- there has to be a relevancy tie. It has to be tied in. One cannot simply talk about a theory or a process and -- in the abstract without tying it to the facts of this case.

In order to be admissible under Lanigan, one has to establish not only that the theory or process is generally accepted within the scientific community, but that it has relevance to the facts in this case.

And in addition, her statement was basically that it's controversial whether or not -- that there's disagreement whether or

2-308

2 - 309not suggestibility effects render the child's 1 original memory inaccessible. And my 2 understanding, and my recollection, is that 3 is what we were told her proffer would be. 4 5 THE COURT: Mr. Sultan? 6 MR. SULTAN: Well, your Honor, with 7 respect to the first point, Dr. Schetky was proffered as a witness for the limited 8 purpose of demonstrating to the Court that 9 Dr. Bruck's testimony, had it been -- if it 10 11 were presented in either a pretrial context, or in a trial context, in 1998, would be 12 13 admissible under Lanigan. 14 Basically, as one -- since one of the 15 indicia under Lanigan is generally --16 basically, the Frye standard, which is in effect what she testified to. 17 18 So there's certainly no requirement that the witness who comes in and says, and 19 testifies to general acceptance, that that 20 witness know anything about the underlying 21 facts of the case. So I think the first 22 objection is without merit. 23 24 With respect to the second

objection, she did testify at the end of cross that a particular point, that is, whether children's memories are permanently tainted, or whether it is merely the report which is affected by the suggestive techniques, remains in controversy. But I don't see how that in any way detracts from her testimony with respect to all of the various elements of Dr. Bruck's testimony with respect to suggestive interviewing techniques and their impact on the reliability of the child's report.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

13 That is what the essence is of our claim. We are not -- the essence of our claim is that the suggestive interviewing techniques that were used here rendered the resulting reports inherently unreliable. Frankly, it doesn't matter whether the child came to actually believe that he or she was abused, or whether the child was simply saying that he or she was abused to please somebody.

> The important thing, from the standpoint of the defense motion, is that

2-310

2-311 1 those subsequent reports were inherently 2 unreliable in the same way that eyewitness 3 identification testimony following an overly 4 suggestive show-up or photo array would be 5 inherently unreliable whether or not the 6 defendant was in fact the perpetrator. 7 So that is the essence of our -- that 8 is the thrust, really, of our position here. And I don't see how the Commonwealth's 9 10 objection really goes to the essence of 11 what's before the Court. 12 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, I believe 13 the Court will recall, we were here; I 14 specifically asked several times what theory 15 Dr. Schetky would be testifying on because we 16 did not have an affidavit from her. Mr. 17 Sultan actually kept saying, "I don't understand why Ms. Rooney is so befuddled, because she keeps asking the same question." And the question I kept asking, and your Honor eventually clarified for me, is what Dr. Schetky was going to be offering testimony on. And we were told that Dr. Schetky would be offering testimony that it

וטישים

531-6989

PENGAD + 1-P

Э

V OU I

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

2 - 3121 was generally accepted within the scientific 2 community that suggestive interviewing 3 techniques alters a child's memory. 4 Now, the record will speak for 5 itself, but that is my distinct recollection of what we were told her testimony would be. 6 7 I would submit that that was not what her 8 testimony was, and in fact, what she 9 testified to on that particular point was 10 that it's in controversy. 11 MR. SULTAN: Well, let me respond --12 THE COURT: I recall that it was 13 "may" - may alter a child's memory or may 14 alter a report of what may have actually 15 happened. I recall that it was broader than 16 that, frankly, is my recollection. 17 I'm going to deny the motion to 18 strike. 19 The witness or witnesses that the 20 Commonwealth intends to call? 21 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, I will be happy to report that to the Court by the end 22 23 of this week. My intent was to listen to the 24 testimony here and make a determination as to

FORM LASER JND A 🌑 PENGAD • 1-8. 331-5989

10/97D

2 - 3 1 31 whether or not we would be offering expert 2 testimony. 3 THE COURT: Okay. So I will have, the 4 Court and the defendant will have, in writing 5 from your office, what expert or experts you 6 intend to call? .7 MS. ROONEY: Yes. 8 THE COURT: And I would like to pick 9 a date now for that next hearing. I also have 10 not yet gotten a memorandum of law in 11 opposition to the Defendant's Motion for a 12 New Trial. I've given the Commonwealth a 13 significant amount of leeway on that. That 14 leeway is now ending. 15 MS. ROONEY: Your Honor, perhaps we 16 were under a misimpression. I thought that 17 you had requested that we have that 18 memorandum for you by March 2nd. Perhaps I'm 19 incorrect. 20 THE COURT: It may be my memory 21 that's faulty, and I'll agree it happens. So, 22 by March 2 at the latest. 23 MS. ROONEY: Certainly. 24 THE COURT: And you will -- shall I

10/97D

FORM LASER UND A (FORD + 1-8L, 331-6989

2-314 1 pick one, perhaps as many as two days for 2 your witness or witnesses? It depends. I 3 don't know. You may be calling just one. 4 MS. ROONEY: I can't imagine we'd be 5 calling more than one, your Honor. 6 THE COURT: Okay. So why don't we 7 pick one day then. I think we should be able 8 to conclude, hopefully, within one day. 9 MS. ROONEY: I would think so. 10 THE COURT: This Friday's the 20th. 11 Is March 2 unrealistic, or should we do March 12 16th instead? 13 MS. ROONEY: Depending upon what the 14 Court is going to require for the 15 Commonwealth to provide to defense prior to. 16 I believe they stated they wanted at least 17 two weeks upon receiving some kind of a 18 written statement. 19 THE COURT: You're going to do an 20 affidavit? 21 MS. ROONEY: If the Court orders us to, we certainly will. It just may -- it's 22 23 going to take us some time to figure out who the expert is and then prepare an affidavit. 24

-631-6985 PENGAD • 1-Э A UNC 1 UHM LASE

11/9/1

2-315 1 THE COURT: It doesn't matter to me 2 as much whether it's in affidavit form or 3 report form, but it should be reduced to 4 writing. You're going to tell us by Friday. 5 When will you have that report available? 6 MS. ROONEY: I could probably have it 7 within two weeks of Friday. I'm saying this, 8 again, without having conferred with --9 THE COURT: Two weeks from Friday 10 is --11 MS. ROONEY: I don't have a calendar. 12 MR. SULTAN: The 6th, your Honor, of 13 March. 14 THE COURT: So by March 6th, you will 15 have a written report from your expert. By 16 February 20th we'll know who the expert is. 17 And you need two weeks from March 6th? 18 MR. SULTAN: I think that's fair, 19 your Honor. 20 THE COURT: So, Monday, March 23 for 21 the Commonwealth's hearing? 22 MR. SULTAN: That's fine for the 23 defense, your Honor. 24 THE COURT: Okay. And then by March

1000

631-6989

PENGAU . 14

Э

2-316 1 2, your memorandum in opposition of the 2 Motion for New Trial. 3 In terms of scheduling, any other 4 issues I need to address with counsel? 5 MR. SULTAN: Only, your Honor, that as I understand it, the Court is going to 6 7 give both sides leave to file a post-hearing memorandum, after all the evidence has been 8 9 complete, is that correct? 10 THE COURT: Post-hearing memorandum, 11 slash, brief. 12 MR. SULTAN: Right. 13 THE COURT: Yes. And there may be a 14 number of issues. You all remain a few 15 minutes anyway and there are a number of issues, just procedural things, that I want 16 to go over with counsel before you leave. 17 18 MR. SULTAN: That's all, your Honor. 19 THE COURT: Thank you. 20 MS. ROONEY: Thank you. (Hearing adjourns 4:04 p.m.) 21 22 [Lobby Conference, not transcribed.] 23 24

10/97D

FORM LASER B. J. A 🏵 PENGAD • 1-600 (-6989

2 - 317

CERTIFICATE

I, Patricia Bellusci, do hereby certify that the foregoing transcript, pages 2 through 317, is a complete, accurate and true record of my voice recorded tapes taken in the aforementioned matter to the best of my skill and ability.

Patricia Bellusci

Official Court Reporter The foregoing certification does not apply to any reproduction of the same by any means unless under the direct control and/or direction of the certifying reporter.